This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

**Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

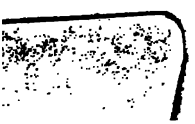
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

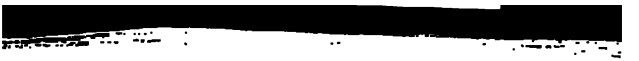
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

**About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07609506 0





# THE

# WORKS

## OF

## *LAURENCE STERNE*, A. M.

## IN

## FIVE VOLUMES.

## VOLUME SECOND.

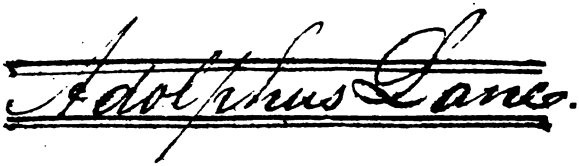
HARRISBURGH:
PRINTED BY JOHN WYETH.
M DCCC IV.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
816383
ASTOR LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1918 L

# THE LIFE AND OPINIONS OF TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENTLEMAN.

VOL. II.

Adolphus Lane.



THE

# LIFE AND OPINIONS

OF

# TRISTRAM SHANDY, Gent.

## CHAP. XXV.

—NO doubt, sir,——there is a whole chapter wanting here—and a chasm of ten pages made in the book by it——but the book-binder is neither a fool, or a knave, or a puppy—nor is the book a jot more imperfect, (at least upon that score)——but, on the contrary, the book is more perfect and complete, by wanting the chapter, than having it, as I shall demonstrate to your reverences in this manner——I question first, by the bye, whether the same experiment might not be made as successfully upon sundry other chapters—but there's no end, an' please your reverences, in trying experiments upon chapters—we have had enough of it—so there's an end *of that* matter.

But before I begin my demonstration, let me only tell you, that the chapter which I have torn out, and which otherwise you would all have been reading just now, instead of this,—was the description of my father's, my uncle Toby's, Trim's, and Obadiah's setting out and journeying to the visitations at ****.

We'll go in the coach, said my father——— Prithee, have the arms been altered, Obadiah? ———It would have made my story much better, to have begun with telling you, that at the time my mother's arms were added to the Shandy's, when the coach was repainted upon my father's marriage, it had so fallen out, that the coach-painter, whether by performing all his works with the left hand, like Turpelius the Roman, or Hans Holbein, of Basil,—or whether 'twas more from the blunder of his head than hand—or whether, lastly, it was from the sinister turn, which every thing relating to our family was apt to take—it so fell out, however, to our reproach, that, instead of the bend dexter, which, since Harry the eighths reign, was honestly our due—a bend-sinister, by some of these fatalities, had been drawn quite across the field of the Shandy arms. 'Tis scarce credible that the mind of so wise a man as my father was, could be so much incommoded with so small a matter. The word coach——let it be whose it would—or coach-man, or coach-horse, or coach-hire, could never be named in the family, but he constantly complained of carrying this vile mark of illegitimacy upon the door of his own; he never once was able to step into the coach, or out of it, without turning round, to take a view of the arms, and making a vow, at the same time, that it was the last time he would ever set his foot in it again, till the bend-sinister was taken out—*but, like the affair* of the hinge, it was one of the

many things which the destinies had set down in their books—ever to be grumbled at (and in wiser families than ours)—but never to be mended.

——Has the bend-sinister been brush'd out, I say? said my father——There has been nothing brush'd out, sir, answered Obadiah, but the lining. We'll go o'horse-back, said my father, turning to Yorick——Of all things in the world, except politics, the clergy know the least of heraldry, said Yorick——No matter for that, cried my father—I should be sorry to appear with a blot in my escutcheon before them——Never mind the bend-sinister, said my uncle Toby, putting on his tie-wig——No, indeed, said my father—you may go with my aunt Dinah, to a visitation with a bend-sinister, if you think fit——My poor uncle Toby blush'd. My father was vexed at himself——No—my dear brother Toby, said my father, changing his tone—but the damp of the coach-lining about my loins, may give me the sciatica again, as it did December, January and February, last winter—so, if you please, you shall ride my wife's pad,—and as you are to preach, Yorick, you had better make the best of your way before—and leave me to take care of my brother Toby, and to follow at our own rates.

Now, the chapter I was obliged to tear out, was the description of this cavalcade, in which Corporal Trim and Obadiah, upon two coach-horses abreast, led the way as slow as a patrole—whilst my uncle Toby, in his lac'd regimentals and tie-wig, kept his rank with my father, in deep roads and dissertations alternately upon the advantage of learning and arms, as each could get the start.

——But the painting of this journey, upon reviewing it, appears to be so much above the style and manner of any thing else I have been able to paint in this book, that it could not have remained in it, without depreciating every other scene, and destroying, at the same time, that necessary equipoise and balance, (whether of good or bad) betwixt chapter and chapter, from whence the just proportions and harmony of the whole work results. For my own part, I am but just set up in the business, so know little about it—but, in my opinion, to write a book, is for all the world like humming a song—be but in tune with yourself, madam, 'tis no matter how high or how low you take it.——

—This is the reason, may it please your reverences, that some of the lowest and flattest compositions pass off very well (as Yorick told my uncle Toby one night) by siege—My uncle Toby looked brisk at the sound of the word siege, but could neither make head or tail of it.

I am to preach at court next Sunday, said Homenas,—run over my notes—so I humm'd over dr. Homenas's notes—the modulation's very well —'twill do Homenas, if it holds on at this rate—so on I humm'd—and a tolerable tune I thought it was; and to this hour may it please your reverences, had never found out how low, how flat, how spiritless and jejune it was; but that, all of a sudden, up started an air in the middle of it, so fine, so rich, so heavenly—it carried my soul up with it into the other world: Now, had I (as Montaigne complained in a parallel accident)—had I found the declivity easy, or the assent accessible —certes I had been outwitted——your notes Homenas, I should have said, are good notes—— but it was so perpendicular a precipice—so whol-

ly cut off from the rest of the work, that by the first note I humm'd, I found myself flying into the other world, and from thence discovered the vale from whence I came, so deep, so low, and dismal that I shall never have the heart to descend into it again.

☞ A dwarf who brings a standard along with him, to measure his own size—take my word, is a dwarf in more articles than one—And so much for tearing out of chapters.

## CHAP. XXVI.

——SEE if he is not cutting it all into slips, and giving them about him to light their pipes!—'Tis abominable, answered Didius;—it should not go unnoticed, said doctor Kysarcius—☞ he was of the Kysarcij of the low countries.

Methinks, said Didius, half rising from his chair, in order to remove a bottle and a tall decanter which stood in a direct line betwixt him and Yorick———you might have spared this sarcastic stroke, and have hit upon a more proper place, Mr. Yorick, or at least upon a more proper occasion, to have shown your contempt of what we have been about: If the sermon is of no better worth than to light pipes with—'twas certainly, sir, not good enough to be preached before so learned a body; and if 'twas good enough to be preached before so learned a body—'twas certainly, sir, too good to light their pipes with afterwards.——

——I have got him fast hung up, quoth Didius to himself, upon one of the two horns of my dilemma—let him get off as he can.

I have undergone such unspeakable torments, in bringing forth this sermon, quoth Yorick, upon this occasion,—that I declare, Didius, I would suffer martyrdom—and, if it was possible, my horse with me, a thousand times over, before I would sit down and make such another: I was delivered of it at the wrong end of me—it came from my head instead of my heart—and it is for the pain it gave me, both in the writing and preaching of it, that I revenge myself of it in this manner. To preach, to show the extent of our reading, or the subtleties of our wit—to parade it in the eyes of the vulgar, with the beggarly accounts of a little learning, tinselled over with a few words which glitter, but convey little light, and less warmth—is a dishonest use of the poor single half hour in a week, which is put into our hands—'tis not preaching the gospel—but ourselves.—For my own part, continued Yorick, I had rather direct five words point-blank to the heart.

As Yorick, pronounced the word point-blank, my uncle Toby rose up to say something upon projectiles—when a single word, and no more, uttered from the opposite side of the table, drew every one's ears towards it—a word, of all others in the dictionary, the least in that place to be expected—a word I am ashamed to write—yet must be written—must be read—illegal—uncanonical—guess ten thousand guesses, multiplied into themselves—rack—torture your invention for ever, you're where you was—In short, I'll tell it in the next chapter.

## CHAP. XXVII.

ZOUNDS !.....

.....

Z——ds ! cried Phutatorious, partly to himself—and yet high enough to be heard—and, what seemed odd, 'twas uttered in a construction of look, and in a tone of voice, somewhat between that of a man in amazement, and one in bodily pain.

One or two who had very nice ears, and could distinguish the expression and mixture of the two tones as plainly as a third or a fifth, or any other chord in music—were the most puzzled and perplexed with it :—The concord was good in itself, but then 'twas quite out of the key, and no way applicable to the subject started ;—so that with all their knowledge, they could not tell what in the world to make of it.

Others, who knew nothing of musical expression, and merely lent their ears to the plain import of the word, imagined that Phutatorius, who was somewhat of a choleric spirit, was just going to snatch the cudgels out of Didius's hands, in order to bemaul Yorick to some purpose—and that the desperate monosyllable Z—ds was the exordium to an oration, which, as they judged from the sample, presaged but a rough kind of handling of him, so that my uncle Toby's good nature felt a pang for what Yorick was about to undergo. But seeing Phutatorius stop short, without any attempt or desire to go on—a third party began to suppose, that it was no more than an involuntary *respiration,* casually forming itself into the

shape of a twelve-penny oath—without the sin or substance of one.

Others, and especially one or two who sat next him, looked upon it, on the contrary, as a real and substantial oath propensely formed against Yorick, to whom he was known to bear no good liking which said oath as my father philosophized upon it, actually lay freting and fuming at that very time in the upper regions of Phutatorius's purtenance; and so was naturally, and according to the due course of things first squeezed out by the sudden influx of blood, which was driven into the right ventricle of Phutatorius's heart, by the stroke of surprise which so strange a theory of preaching had excited.

How finely we argue upon mistaken facts!

There was not a soul busied in all these various reasonings upon the monosyllable which Phutatorius uttered,—who did not take this for granted, proceeding upon it as from an axiom, namely, that Phutatorius's mind was intent upon the subject of debate which was arising between Didius and Yorick; and indeed as he looked first towards the one, and then towards the other, with the air of a man listening to what was going forwards, ——who would not have thought the same? but the truth was, that Phutatorius knew not one word or one syllable of what was passing—but his whole thoughts and attention were taken up with a transaction which was going forwards at that very instant within the precincts of his own galligaskins, and in a part of them, where, of all others, he stood most interested to watch accidents: So that, notwithstanding he looked with all the attention in the world, and had gradually *screwed up every* nerve and muscle in his face,

to the utmost pitch the instrument would bear, in order, as it was thought, to give a sharp reply to Yorick, who sat over against him—yet I say, was Yorick never once in any one domicil of Phutatorius's brain—but the true cause of his exclamation lay at least a yard below.

This I will endeavor to explain to you with all imaginable decency.

You must be informed, then, that Gastripheres, who had taken a turn into the kitchen a little before dinner, to see how things went on——observing a wicker-basket of fine chesnuts standing upon the dresser, had ordered that a hundred or two of them might be roasted and sent in, as soon as dinner was over—Gastripheres enforcing his orders about them, that Didius, but Phutatorius especially, were particularly fond of 'em.

About two minutes before the time that my uncle Toby interrupted Yorick's harangue—— Gastripheres's chesnuts were brought in—and as Phutatorius's fondness for 'em, was uppermost in the waiter's head, he laid them directly before Phutatorius, wrapt up hot in a clean damask napkin.

Now, whether it was physically impossible, with half a dozen hands all thrust into the napkin at a time—but that some one chesnut, of more life and rotundity than the rest, must be put in motion—it so fell out, however, that one was actually sent rolling off the table; and as Phutatorius sat straddling under——it fell perpendicularly into that particular aperture of Phutatorius's breeches, for which, to the shame and indelicacy of our language be it spoke, there is no chaste word throughout all Johnson's dictionary—Let it suffice to say —it was that *particular* aperture, which, in all

good societies, the laws of decorum do strictly require, like the temple of Janus, (in peace at least) to be universally shut up.

The neglect of this punctilio in Phutatorius (which, by the bye, should be a warning to all mankind) had opened a door to this accident,—— Accident, I call it, in compliance to a received mode of speaking,—but in no opposition to the opinion either of Acrites or Mythogeras in this matter; I know they were both prepossessed and fully persuaded of it—and are so to this hour, That there was nothing of accident in the whole event.—But, that the chesnut's taking that particular course, and in a manner, of its own accord ——and then falling with all its heat directly into that one particular place, and no other—was a real judgment upon Phutatorius, for that filthy and obscene treatise de Concubinis retinendis, which Phutatorius had published about twenty years ago—and was that identical week going to give the world a second edition of.

It is not my business to dip my pen in this controversy—much undoubtedly may be wrote on both sides of the question—all that concerns me, as an historian, is to represent the matter of fact, and render it credible to the reader, that the hiatus in Phutatorius's breeches, was sufficiently wide to receive the chesnut;—and that the chesnut, somehow or other, did fall perpendicularly and piping hot into it, without Phutatorius's perceiving it, or any one else at that time.

The genial warmth which the chesnut imparted, was not undelectable for the first twenty or five and twenty seconds,—and did no more than gently solicit Phutatorius's attention towards the *part*;——But the heat gradually increasing, and

in a few seconds more, getting beyond the point of all sober pleasure, and then advancing with all speed into the regions of pain,——the soul of Phutatorius, together with all his ideas, his thoughts, his attention, his imagination, judgment, resolution, deliberation, ratiocination, memory, fancy, with ten battalions of animal spirits, all tumultuously crowded down, through different defiles and circuits, to the place in danger, leaving all his upper regions, as you may imagine, as empty as my purse.

With the best intelligence, which all these messengers could bring him back, Phutatorius was not able to dive into the secret of what was going forwards below, nor could he make any kind of conjecture, what the devil was the matter with it: However, as he knew not what the true cause might turn out, he deemed it most prudent, in the situation he was in at present, to bear it, if possible, like a stoic; which, with the help of some wry faces and compursions of the mouth, he had certainly accomplished, had his imagination continued neuter——But the sallies of the imagination are ungovernable in things of this kind—— A thought instantly darted into his mind, that tho' the anguish had the sensation of glowing heat ——it might, notwithstanding that, be a bite as well as a burn; and if so, that possibly a newt, or an asker, or some such detestible reptile, had crept up, and was fastening his teeth——the horrid idea of which, with a fresh glow of pain arising that instant from the chesnut, seized Phutatorius with a sudden panic, and in the first terrifying disorder of the passion, it threw him, as it has done the best generals upon earth, quite off his guard; ——the effect of which was this, that he leapt incontinently up, uttering, as he rose, that interjection *of surprise* so much descanted upon, with

the aposiopestic break after it, marked thus, Z——ds !——which, tho' not strictly canonical, was still as little as any man could have said upon the occasion ;——and which, by the bye, whether canonical or not, Phutatorius could no more help than he could the cause of it.

Tho' this has taken up some time in the narrative, it took up little more time in the transaction, than just to allow time for Phutatorius to draw forth the chesnut, and throw it down with violence upon the floor——and for Yorick to rise from his chair, and pick the chesnut up.

It is curious to observe the triumph of slight incidents over the mind:——What incredible weight they have in forming and governing our opinions, both of men and things,——that trifles, light as air, shall waft a belief into the soul, and plant it so immoveably within it——that Euclid's demonstrations, could they be brought to batter it in breach, should not all have power to overthrow it.

Yorick, I said, picked up the chesnut which Phutatorius's wrath had flung down—the action was trifling—I am ashamed to account for it—he did it, for no reason, but that he thought the chesnut not a jot worse for the adventure—and that he held a good chesnut worth stooping for.—But this incident, trifling as it was, wrought differently in Phutatorius's head : He considered this act of Yorick's, in getting off his chair, and picking up the chesnut, as a plain acknowledgment in him, that the chesnut was originally his,—and in course, that it must have been the owner of the chesnut, and no one else, who could have played him such a prank with it. What greatly confirmed him in this opinion, was this, that the table being *parallelogrammical* and very narrow, it afford-

ed a fair opportunity for Yorick, who sat directly over against Phutatorius, of slipping the chesnut in——and consequently that he did it. The look of something more than suspicion, which Phutatorius cast full upon Yorick as these tho'ts arose, too evidently spoke his opinion.—And as Phutatorius was naturally supposed to know more of the matter than any person besides, his opinion at once became the general one——and for a reason very different from any which have been yet given;——in a little time it was put out of all manner of dispute.

When great or unexpected events fall out upon the stage of this sublunary world—the mind of man, which is an inquisitive kind of a substance, naturally takes a flight behind the scenes, to see what is the cause and first spring of them——— The search was not long in this instance.

It was well known that Yorick had never a good opinion of the treatise which Phutatorius had wrote de Concubinis retinendis, as a thing which he feared had done hurt in the world——and 'twas easily found out, that there was a mystical meaning in Yorick's prank——and that his chucking the chesnut hot into Phutatorius's ***——****, was a sarcastical fling at his book——the doctrines of which, they said, had inflamed many an honest man in the same place.

This conceit awaken'd Somnolentius——made Agalastes smile——and if you can recollect the precise look and air of a man's face intent in finding out a riddle—it threw Gastipheres's into that form—and in short was thought by many to be a master stroke of arch wit.

This, as the reader has seen, from one end to the other, was as groundless as the dreams of philosophy: Yorick, no doubt, as Shakespeare said of his ancestor——"was a man of jest," but it was temper'd with something which withheld him from that, and many other ungracious pranks, of which he as undeservedly bore the blame;—but it was his misfortune all his life long to bear the imputation of saying and doing a thousand things, of which (unless my esteem blinds me) his nature was incapable. All I blame him for——or rather, all I blame and alternately like him for, was that singularity of temper, which would never suffer him to take pains to set a story right with the world, however in his power. In every ill usage of that sort, he acted precisely as in the affair of his lean horse;——he could have explained it to his honor, but his spirit was above it; and besides, he ever looked upon the inventor, the propagator and believer of an illiberal report alike so injurious to him;——he could not stoop to tell his story to them,—and so trusted to time and truth to do it for him.

This heroic cast produced him inconveniences in many respects—in the present it was followed by the fixed resentment of Phutatorius, who, as Yorick had just made an end of his chesnut, rose up from his chair a second time, to let him know it—which indeed he did with a smile; saying only——that he would endeavor not to forget the obligation.

But you must mark and carefully separate and distinguish these two things in your mind.

—The smile was for the company.

—The threat was for Yorick.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

—CAN you tell me, quoth Phutatorius, speaking to Gastripheres, who sat next to him—for one would not apply to a surgeon in so foolish an affair,——can you tell me, Gastripheres, what is best to take out the fire ?——Ask Eugenius, said Gastripheres.——That greatly depends, said Eugenius, pretending ignorance of the adventure, upon the nature of the part——If it is a tender part, and a part which can be conveniently wrapt up. It is both the one and the other, replied Phutatorius, laying his hand as he spoke, with an emphatical nod of his head, upon the part in question, and lifting up his right leg at the same time to ease and ventilate it—If that is the case, said Eugenius, I would advise you, Phutatorius, not to tamper with it by any means; but if you will send to the next printer, and trust your cure to such a simple thing as a soft sheet of paper just come off the press——you need do nothing more than twist it round——The damp paper, quoth Yorick (who sat next to his friend Eugenius) tho' I know it has a refreshing coolness in it—yet I presume is no more than the vehicle——and that the oil and lampblack with which the paper is so strongly impregnated, does the business—Right, said Eugenius, and is, of any outward application I would venture to recommend, the most anodyne and safe.

Was it my case, said Gastrispheres, as the main thing is the oil and lampblack, I should spread them thick upon a rag, and clap it on di rectly. That would make a very devil of it, r

plied Yorick——And besides, added Eugenius, it would not answer the intention, which is the extreme neatness and elegance of the prescription, which the faculty hold to be half in half—— for consider if the type is a very small one, (which it should be) the sanative particles, which come into contact in this form, have the advantage of being spread so infinitely thin, and with such a mathematical equality (fresh paragraphs and large capitals excepted) as no art or management of the spatula can come up to. It falls out very luckily, replied Phutatorius, that the second edition of my treatise de Concubinis retinendis, is, at this instant in the press——You may take any leaf of it, said Eugenius—no matter which—provided, quoth Yorick, there is no baudry in it.

They are just now, replied Phutatorius, printing off the ninth chapter———which is the last chapter but one in the book——Pray what is the title to that chapter? said Yorick, making a respectful bow to Phutatorius as he spoke———I think, answered Phutatorius, 'tis that, de re concubinaria.

For heaven's sake keep out of that chapter,—quoth Yorick.

—By all means—added Eugenius.

## CHAP. XXIX.

——NOW, quoth Didius, rising up, and laying his right-hand with his fingers spread upon his breast———had such a blunder about a christian name happened before the *reformation*———(it happened the day before

yesterday, quoth my uncle Toby to himself)—and when baptism was administered in Latin——— ('Twas all in English, said my uncle)——many things might have coincided with it, and, upon the authority of sundry decreed cases, to have pronounced the baptism null, with the power of giving the child a new name,——Had a priest, for instance, which was no uncommon thing, thro' ignorance of the Latin tongue, baptized a child of Tom o'Stiles, in nomine patrim & filia & spiritum sanctos——the baptism was held null—I beg your pardon, replied Kysarcius;——in that case, as the mistake was only in the terminations, the baptism was valid—and to have rendered it null, the blunder of the priest should have fallen upon the first syllable of each noun—and not, as in your case, upon the last.

My father delighted in subtleties of this kind, and listened with infinite attention.

Gastripheres, for example, continued Kysarcius, baptizes a child of John Stradling's in gomine gatris, &c. &c. instead of in nomine patris, &c.—Is this a baptism? No—say the ablest canonists; inasmuch as the radix of each word is hereby torn up, and the sense and meaning of them removed and changed quite to another object: For gomine does not signify a name, nor gatris a father——What do they signify? said my uncle Toby—Nothing at all, quoth Yorick—Ergo, such a baptism is null, said Kysarcius—In course—answered Yorick, in a tone two parts jest and one part earnest—

But in the case cited, continued Kysarcius, where patrim is put for patris, filia for filii, and so on—as it is a fault only in the declension, and the roots of the words continue untouch'd, the inflections of their branches, either this way or *that, does not in any* sort hinder the baptism, in-

asmuch as the same sense continues in the words as before.——But then, said Didius, the intention of the priest's pronouncing them grammatically, must have been proved to have gone along with it.——Right, answered Kysarcius; and of this, brother Didius, we have an instance in a decree of the decretals of Pope Leo the IIId.—But my brother's child, cried my uncle Toby, has nothing to do with the Pope—'tis the plain child of a protestant gentleman, christened Tristram against the wills and wishes of both its father and mother, and all who are a-kin to it.——

If the wills and wishes, said Kysarcius, interrupting my uncle Toby, of those only who stand related to Mr. Shandy's child, were to have weight in this matter, Mrs. Shandy, of all people, has the least to do in it. My uncle Toby laid down his pipe, and my father drew his chair still closer to the table to hear the conclusion of so strange an introduction.

It has not only been a question, Captain Shandy, amongst the best* lawyers and civilians in this land, continued Kysarcius, "Whether the mo-"ther be of kin to her child;"—but, after much dispassionate inquiry and jactitation of the argument on all sides——it has been adjudged for the negative——namely, "That the mother is "not of kin to her child."† My father instantly clapp'd his hand upon my uncle Toby's mouth, under colour of whispering in his ear;—the truth was, he was alarmed for Lillabullero—and having a great desire to hear more of so curious an argument—he begg'd my uncle Toby, for heaven's sake, not to disappoint him in it—My uncle Toby gave a nod—resumed his pipe, and, contenting

* *Vide Swinburn on Testaments*, Part 7. § 8.
† *Vide Brook Abridg. Tit Administr.* N. 47.

himself with whistling Lillabullero inwardly—Kysarcius, Didius, and Tripolemus went on with the discourse as follows:

This determination, continued Kysarcius, how contrary soever it may seem to run to the stream of vulgar ideas, yet had reason strongly on its side; and has been put out of all manner of dispute, from the famous case, known commonly by the name of the Duke of Suffolk's case. It is cited in Brook, said Triptolemus—And taken notice of by Lord Coke, added Didius—And you may find it in Swinburn on Testaments, said Kysarcius.

The case, Mr. Shandy, was this.

In the reign of Edward the Sixth, Charles Duke of Suffolk having issue a son by one venter, and a daughter by another venter, made his last will, wherein he devised goods to his son, and died; after whose death the son died also—but without will, without wife, and without child—his mother and his sister by the father's side (for she was born of the former venter) then living. The mother took the administration of her son's goods, according to the statute of the 21st of Harry the Eight, whereby it is enacted, That in case any person die intestate, the administration of his goods shall be committed to the next of kin.

The administration being thus (surreptitiously) granted to the mother, the sister by the father's side commenced a suit before the Ecclesiastical Judge, alledging, 1st, That she herself was next of kin; and, 2dly, That the mother was not of kin at all to the party deceased; and therefore, pray'd the court, That the administration granted to the mother might be revoked, and be committed unto *her, as next* of kin to the deceased, by *force of the said* statute.

Hereupon, as it was a great cause, and much depending upon its issue—and many causes of great property likely to be decided in times to come, by the precedent to be then made—the most learned, as well in the laws of this realm, as in the civil law, were consulted together, whether the mother was of kin to her son or no.

—Whereunto, not only the temporal lawyers—but the church lawyers—the juris consulti—the juris-prudentes—the civilians—the advocates—the commissaries—the judges of the consistory and prerogative courts of Canterbury and York, with the master of the faculties, were all unanimously of opinion, that the mother was not of *kin to her child.

And what said the Duchess of Suffolk to it? said my uncle Toby.

The unexpectedness of my uncle Toby's question, confounded Kysarcius more than the ablest advocate—He stopp'd a full minute, looking in my uncle Toby's face without replying—and in that single minute Triptolemus put by him, and took the lead as follows:

'Tis a ground and principle in law, said Triptolemus, that things do not ascend but descend in it: And I make no doubt 'tis for this cause, that however true it is, that the child may be of the blood and seed of its parents—that the parents, nevertheless, are not of the blood and seed of it; inasmuch as the parents are not begot by the child, but the child by the parents——For so they write, Liberi sunt de sanguine patris & matris, sed pater et mater non sunt de sanguine liberorum.

* *Mater non numeratur inter consanguineos. Bald. in ult. C. de Verb. signific.*

—But this, Triptolemus, cried Didius, proves too much—for, from this authority cited, it would follow, not only what indeed is granted on all sides, that the mother is not of kin to her child —but the father likewise—It is held, said Triptolemus, the better opinion; because the father, the mother, and the child, tho' they be three persons, yet they are but (una caro*) one flesh; and consequently no degree of kindred—or any method of acquiring one in nature—There you push the argument again too far, cried Didius—for there is no prohibition in nature, tho' there is in the Levitical law—but that a man may beget a child upon his grandmother——in which case, supposing the issue a daughter, she would stand in relation both of———But who ever thought, cried Kysarcius, of lying with his grandmother? —The young gentleman, replied Yorick, whom Selden speaks of——who not only thought of it, but justified his intention to his father by the argument drawn from the law of retaliation—— "You lay, sir, with my mother, said the lad— why may not I lie with yours?"—'Tis the argumentum commune, added Yorick. 'Tis as good, replied Eugenius, taking down his hat, as they deserve.

The company broke up.

* *Vide Brook Abridg. tit. Administr. N.* 47.

## CHAP. XXX.

—AND pray, said my uncle Toby, leaning upon Yorick, as he and my father were helping him leisurely down the stairs——Don't be terrified, madam, this stair-case conversation is not so long as the last—And pray, Yorick, said my uncle Toby, which way is this said affair of Tristram at length settled by these learned men? Very satisfactorily, replied Yorick; no mortal, sir, has any concern with it—for Mrs. Shandy, the mother, is nothing at all a-kin to him—and as the mother is the surest side—Mr. Shandy, in course, is still less than nothing——In short, he is not as much a-kin to him, sir, as I am—

—That may well be, said my father, shaking his head,

—Let the learned say what they will, there must certainly, quoth my uncle Toby, have been some sort of consanguinity betwixt the duchess of Suffolk and her son.—

The vulgar are of the same opinion, quoth Yorick, to this hour.

## CHAP. XXXI.

THO' my father was hugely tickled with the subtleties of these learned discourses—'twas still but like the anointing of a broken bone—— The moment he got home, the weight of his afflictions returned upon him but so much the *heavier, as* is ever the case when the staff we lean

on slips from under us——He became pensive ——walked frequently forth to the fish-pond—— let down one loop of his hat——sigh'd often—— forebore to snap——and as the hasty sparks of temper, which occasion snapping, so much assist perspiration and digestion, as Hippocrates tells us—he had certainly fallen ill with the extinction of them, had not his thoughts been critically drawn off, and his health rescued by a fresh train of disquietudes left him, with a legacy of a thousand pounds by my aunt Dinah.

My father had scarce read the letter, when, taking the thing by the right end, he instantly begun to plague and puzzle his head how to lay it out mostly to the honor of his family——A hundred and fifty odd projects took possession of his brains by turns——He would do this, and that, and t'other——He would go to Rome,—he would go to law—he would buy stock—he would buy John Hobson's farm—he would new fore-front his house, and add a new wing to make it even—— There was a fine water-mill on this side, and he would build a wind-mill on the other side of the river, in full view to answer it—But, above all things in the world, he would enclose the great Ox-moor, and send out my brother Bobby immediately upon his travels.

But, as the sum was finite, and consequently could not do every thing—and in truth very few of these to any purpose,——of all the projects which offered themselves upon this occasion, the two last seemed to make the deepest impression; and he would infallibly have determined upon both at once, but for the small inconvenience hinted at above, which absolutely put him under a necessity of deciding in favor of either of the one or the other.

This was not altogether so easy to be done; for tho' 'tis certain my father had long before set his heart upon this necessary part of my brother's education, and, like a prudent man, had actually determined to carry it into execution, with the first money that returned from the second creation of actions in the Missisippi scheme, in which he was an adventurer——yet the Ox-moor, which was a fine, large, whinny, undrained, unimproved common, belonging to the Shandy estate, had almost as old a claim upon him: He had long and affectionately set his heart upon turning it likewise to some account.

But having never hitherto been pressed with such a conjuncture of things, as made it necessary to settle either the priority or justice of their claims—like a wise man he had refrained entering into any nice or critical examination about them; so that upon the dismission of every other project at this crisis——the two old projects, the Ox-moor and my brother, divided him again; and so equal a match were they for each other, as to become the occasion of no small contest in the old gentleman's mind,——which of the two should be set a-going first.

——People may laugh as they will,—but the case was this.

It had ever been the custom of the family, and by length of time was almost become a matter of common right, that the eldest son of it should have free ingress, egress, and regress into foreign parts before marriage,——not only for the sake of bettering their own private parts, by the benefit of exercise and change of so much air—but simply for the mere delectation of his fancy, by *the feather put into* his cap, of having been abroad

——tantum valet, my father would say, quantum sonat.

Now, as this was a reasonable, and, in course, a most Christian indulgence.....to deprive him of it, without why or wherefore,.....and thereby make an example of him, as the first Shandy unwhirl'd about Europe in a post-chaise, and only because he was a heavy lad—would be using him ten times worse than a Turk.—

On the other hand, the case of the Ox-moor was full as hard.

Exclusive of the original purchase-money, which was eight hundred pounds....it had cost the family eight hundred pounds more in a law-suit about fifteen years before.....besides, the Lord knows what trouble and vexation.—

It had been, moreover, in possession of the Shandy family ever since the middle of the last century; and, tho' it lay full in view before the house, bounded on one extremity by the water-mill, and on the other by the projected wind-mill spoken of above,.....and, for all these reasons, seemed to have the fairest title of any part of the estate, to the care and protection of the family.....yet, by an unaccountable fatality, common to men, as well as the ground they tread on.....it had all along most shamefully been overlook'd; and, to speak the truth of it, had suffered so much by it, that it would have made any man's heart have bled (Obadiah said) who understood the value of land, to have rode over it, and only seen the condition it was in.

However, as neither the purchasing of this tract of ground....nor, indeed, the placing of it where it *lay, were either of* them, properly speaking, of

my father's doing....he had never thought himself any way concerned in the affair....till the fifteen years before, when the breaking out of the cursed law-suit mentioned above (and which had arose about its boundaries)....which had been altogether my father's own act and deed, it naturally awakened every other argument in its favor ; and, upon summing them all up together, he saw, not merely in interest, but in honor, he was bound to do something for it, and that now or never was the time.

I think there must certainly have been a mixture of ill luck in it, that the reasons on both sides should happen to be so equally balanced by each other ; for, tho' my father weigh'd them in all humors and condition.....spent many an anxious hour in the most profound and abstracted meditation upon what was best to be done....reading books of farming one day....books of travels another....laying aside all passion whatever...viewing the arguments on both sides in all their lights and circumstances....communing every day with my uncle Toby....arguing with Yorick, and talking over the whole affair of the Ox-moor with Obadiah....yet nothing in all that time appeared so strongly in behalf of the one, which was not either strictly applicable to the other, or at least so far counterbalanced by some consideration of equal weight, as to keep the scales even.

For, to be sure, with proper helps, and in the hands of some people, tho' the Ox-moor would undoubtedly have made a different appearance in the world from what it did, or ever could do in the condition it lay....yet every tittle of this was true, with regard to my brother Bobby——let Obadiah say what he would.—

In point of interest....the contest, I own, at first sight, did not appear so undecisive betwixt them; for, whenever my father took pen and ink in hand, and set about calculating the simple expense of paring and burning, and fencing in the Ox-moor, &c. &c....with the certain profit it would bring him in return....the latter turned out so prodigiously in his way of working the account, that you would have sworn the Ox-moor would have carried all before it....For it was plain he should reap an hundred lasts of rape, at twenty pounds a last, the very first year....besides an excellent crop of wheat the year following....and the year after that, to speak within bounds, an hundred.....but in all likelihood, an hundred and fifty....if not two hundred quarters of pease and beans.....besides potatoes without end.....But then, to think he was all this while breeding up my brother like a hog to eat them....knocked all on the head again, and generally left the old gentleman in such a state of suspense....that, as he often declared to my uncle Toby....he knew no more than his heels what to do.

No body, but he who has felt it, can conceive what a plaguing thing it is to have a man's mind torn asunder by two projects of equal strength, both obstinately pulling in a contrary direction at the same time: For, to say nothing of the havoc, which, by a certain consequence, is unavoidably made by it all over the finer system of the nerves, which, you know, convey the animal spirits and more subtle juices from the heart to the head, and so on.....it is not to be told in what a degree such a wayward kind of friction works upon the more gross and solid parts, wasting the fat, and impairing the strength of a man, every time as it goes backwards and forwards.

My father had certainly sunk under this evil, as certainly as he had done under that of my CHRISTIAN NAME.....had he not been rescued out of it, as he was out of that, by a fresh evil....the misfortune of my brother Bobby's death.

What is the life of man! Is it not to shift from side to side?.....from sorrow to sorrow?.....to button up one cause of vexation?.....and unbutton another?

## CHAP. XXXII.

FROM this moment, I am to be considered as heir apparent to the Shandy family.....and it is from this point properly, that the story of my LIFE and my OPINIONS sets out; with all my hurry and precipitation I have been but clearing the ground to raise the building.....and such a building do I foresee it will turn out, as never was planned, and as never was executed since Adam. In less than five minutes, I shall have thrown my pen into the fire, and the little drop of thick ink which is left remaining at the bottom of my ink-horn, after it,.....I have but half a score things to do in the time....I have a thing to name.....a thing to lament....a thing to hope....a thing to promise, and a thing to threaten.....I have a thing to suppose... a thing to declare....a thing to conceal....a thing to choose, and a thing to pray for.....This chapter, therefore, I name the chapter of THINGS .....and my next chapter to it, that is, the first chapter of my next volume, if I live, shall be my chapter upon WHISKERS, in order to keep up some sort of connection in my works.

The thing I lament is, that things have crowded in so thick upon me, that I have not been able to get into that part of my work, towards which, I have, all the way looked forward with so much earnest desire; and that is the campaigns, but especially the amors of my uncle Toby, the events of which are of so singular a nature, and so Cervantic a cast, that if I can so manage it, as to convey but the same impressions to every other brain, which the occurrences themselves excite in my own.....I will answer for it, the book shall make its way in the world, much better than its master has done before it.....Oh Tristram! Tristram! can this but be once brought about.....the credit, which will attend thee as an author, shall counterbalance the many evils which have befallen thee as a man.....thou wilt feast upon the one.....when thou hast lost all sense and remembrance of the other!.....

No wonder I itch so much as I do, to get at these amors.....They are the choicest morsel of my whole story! and when I do get at 'em..... assure yourselves, good folks,.....(nor do I value whose squeamish stomach takes offence at it) I shall not be at all nice in the choice of my words; .....and that's the thing I have to declare.....I shall never get all through in five minutes, that I fear .....and the thing I hope is, that your worships' and reverences are not offended.....if you are, depend upon't I'll give you something, my good gentry, next year, to be offended at.....that's my dear Jenny's way.....but who my Jenny is.....and which is the right and which the wrong end of a woman, is the thing to be concealed....it shall be told you the next chapter but one to my chapter of button-holes.....and not one chapter before.

And now that you have just got to the end of these four volumes.....the thing I have to ask, is, how you feel your heads ? my own aches dismally !.....as for your healths, I know, they are much better.....True Shandeism, think what you will against it, opens the heart and lungs, and, like all those affections which partake of its nature, it forces the blood, and other vital fluids of the body to run freely through their channels, and makes the wheel of life run long and cheerfully round.

Was I left, like Sancha Panca, to choose my kingdom, it should not be maritime.....or a kingdom of blacks to make a penny of.....no, it should be a kingdom of hearty laughing subjects : And, as the bilious and more saturine passions, by creating disorders in the blood and humors, have as bad an influence, I see, upon the body politic as body natural.....and as nothing but a habit of virtue can fully govern those passions, and subject them to reason.....I should add to my prayer..... that God would give my subjects grace to be as WISE as they were MERRY ; and then should I be the happiest monarch, and they the happiest people under heaven.....

And so, with this moral for the present, may it please your worships and your reverences, I take my leave of you till this time twelvemonth, when (unless this vile cough kills me in the mean time) I'll have another pluck at your beards, and lay open a story to the world you little dream of.

END of the FOURTH BOOK.

To the RIGHT HONORABLE

JOHN

Lord Viscount SPENCER.

MY LORD,

I HUMBLY beg leave to offer you these two volumes; * they are the best my talents, with such bad health as I have, could produce: Had Providence granted me a larger stock of either, they had been a much more proper present to your Lordſhip.

I beg your Lordship will forgive me, if, at the same time I dedicate this work to you, I join Lady SPENCER, in the liberty I

* This work was originally printed in nine vols.

take of inscribing the story of *Le Fever*, in the sixth volume, to her name; for which I have no other motive, which my heart has informed me of, but that the story is a humane one.

*I am,*

*My Lord,*

*Your Lordship's*

*Most devoted,*

*And most humble servant,*

LAUR. STERNE.

THE

# LIFE AND OPINIONS

OF

# TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENT.

## CHAP. I.

IF it had not been for those two mettlesome tits, and that madcap of a postilion, who drove them from Stilton to Stamford, the thought had never entered my head. He flew like lightning ——there was not a slope of three miles and a half——we scarce touched the ground——the motion was most rapid——most impetuous—— ——'twas communicated to my brain——my heart partook of it——"By the great God of day," said I, looking towards the sun, and thrusting my arm out of the fore-window of the chaise, as I made my vow, "I will lock up my study door the moment I get home, and throw the key of it ninety feet below the surface of the earth, into the draw-well at the back of my house."

The London waggon confirmed me in my resolution: It hung tottering upon the hill, scarce progressive, dragg'd—dragg'd up by eight heavy beasts—"by main strength! quoth I, nodding—but your betters draw the same—way and something of every body's——O rare!"

Tell me, ye learn'd, shall we forever be adding so much to the bulk—so little to the stock?

Shall we forever make new books, as apothecaries make new mixtures, by pouring only out of one vessel into another?

Are we forever to be twisting and untwisting the same rope? for ever in the same tract—— for ever at the same pace?

Shall we be distined to the days of eternity, on holy-days, as well as working days, to be showing the relics of learning, as monks do the relics of their saints—without working one—one single miracle with them?

Who made MAN, with powers which dart him from earth to heaven in a moment—that great, that most excellent, and most noble creature of the world—the miracle of nature, as Zoroaster in his book *peri phuseos* called him—the SHEKINAM of the Divine presence, as Chrysostom—the image of God, as Moses—the ray of divinity, as Plato—the marvel of marvels, as Aristotle—to go sneaking on at this pitiful—pimping—pettifogging rate?

I scorn to be as abusive as Horace upon the occasion—but if there is no catachresis in the wish, and no sin in it, I wish from my soul, that every imitator in Great-Britain, France and Ireland,

had the farcy for his pains; and that there was a good farcical house, large enough to hold——ay ——and sublimate them, shag-rag and bob-tail, male and female, all together——And this leads me to the affair of Whiskers———but, by what chain of ideas—I leave as a legacy in mortmain to Prudes and Tartufs, to enjoy and make the most of.

## Upon WHISKERS.

I am sorry I made it—'twas as inconsiderate a promise as ever entered a man's head.—A chapter upon Whiskers! alas, the world will not bear it!——'tis a delicate world——but I knew not of what metal it was made——nor had I ever seen the underwritten fragment; otherwise, as surely (as noses are noses, and whiskers are whiskers still let the world say what it will to the contrary), so surely would I have steered clear of this dangerous chapter.

## The FRAGMENT.

* * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * *
* *——You are half asleep, my good lady, said the old gentleman, taking hold of the old lady's hand, and giving it a gentle squeeze, as he pronounced the word Whiskers—shall we change the subject?——By no means, replied the old lady. I like your account of those matters: So throwing a thin gauze handkerchief over her head, and leaning it back upon the chair with her face turned towards him, and advancing her two feet as she reclined herself——I desire, continued she, you would go on.

*The old gentleman* went on as follows.

——Whiskers! cried the queen of Navarre, dropping her knotting ball, as La Fosseuse uttered the word——Whiskers! Madam, said La Fosseuse, pinning the ball to the queen's apron, and making a curtesy as she repeated it.

La Fosseuse's voice was naturally soft and low, yet 'twas an articulate voice: And every letter of the word Whiskers fell distinctly upon the queen of Navarre's ear——Whiskers! cried the queen, laying a greater stress upon the word, and as if she had still distrusted her ears——Whiskers! replied La Fosseuse, repeating the word a third time——There is not a cavalier, madam, of his age in Navarre, continued the maid of honor, pressing the page's interest upon the queen, that has so gallant a pair——Of what? cried Margaret, smiling——of whiskers, said La Fosseuse, with infinite modesty.

The word Whiskers still stood its ground, and continued to be made use of in most of the best companies throughout the little kingdom of Navarre, notwithstanding the indiscreet use which La Fosseuse had made of it: The truth was, La Fosseuse had pronounced the word, not only before the queen, but upon sundry other occasions at court, with an accent which always implied something of a mystery——And as the court of Margaret, as all the world knows, was at that time a mixture of gallantry and devotion——and whiskers being as applicable to the one as the other, the word naturally stood its ground——it gain'd full as much as it lost; that is, the clergy were for it,—the laity were against it,—and for the women—they were divided.

The excellency of the figure and mien of the *young Sieur de Croix*, was at that time beginning

to draw the attention of the maids of honor towards the terrace before the palace gate, where the guard was mounted. The lady La Baussiere fell deeply in love with him—La Battarelle did the same——it was the finest weather for it that ever was remembered in Navarre——La Guyol, La Maronette, La Sabatiere, fell in love with the Sieur de Croix also——La Rebours and La Fosseuse knew better——De Croix had failed in an attempt to recommend himself to La Rebours; and La Rebours and La Fosseuse were inseparable.

The Queen of Navarre was sitting with her ladies in the painted-bow-window, facing the gate of the second court, as de Croix passed thro' it. He is handsome, said the lady Baussiere—He has a good mien, said La Batarelle.——He is finely shaped, said La Guyol——I never saw an officer of the horse-guards in my life, said La Maronette, with two such legs—Or who stood so well upon them, said La Sabatiere——But he has no whiskers, cried La Fosseuse——Not a pile, said La Rebours.

The queen went directly to her oratory, musing all the way, as she walked thro' the gallery, upon the subject; turning it this way and that way in her fancy—Ava Maria ⋈—what can La Fosseuse mean? said she, kneeling down upon the cushion.

La Guyol, La Battarelle, La Maronette, La Sabatiere, retired instantly to their chambers—— Whiskers! said all four of them to themselves, as they bolted their doors on the inside.

The lady Carnavalette, was counting her beads with both hands, unsuspected, under her farthingal——from St. Anthony, down to St. Ursula inclusive, not a saint passed thro' her fingers

without whiskers; St. Francis, St. Dominick, St. Bennet, St. Basil, St. Bridget, had all whiskers.

The lady Baussiere had got into a wilderness of conceits, with moralizing too intricately upon La Fosseuse's text——She mounted her palfry, her page followed her——the host passed by, the lady Baussiere rode on.

One denier, cried the order of mercy——one single denier, in behalf of a thousand patient captives, whose eyes look towards heaven and you for their redemption.

——The lady Baussiere rode on.

Pity the unhappy, said a devout, venerable, hoary-headed man, meekly holding up a box, begirt with iron, in his withered hands——I beg for the unfortunate——good, my lady, 'tis for a prison——for an hospital——'tis for an old man——a poor man undone by shipwreck, by surety-ship, by fire——I call God and all his angels to witness—'tis to clothe the naked—to feed the hungry—'tis to comfort the sick and the broken-hearted.

——The lady Baussiere rode on.

A decayed kinsman bowed himself to the ground.

——The lady Baussiere rode on.

He ran begging bare-headed on one side of her palfry, conjuring her by the former bonds of friendship, alliance, consanguinity, &c.——cousin, aunt, sister, mother——for virtue's sake, for your own, for mine, for Christ's sake, remember me—pity me.

—The lady Baussiere rode on.

Take hold of my whiskers, said the lady Baussiere.——The page took hold of her palfry.—She dismounted at the end of the terrace.

There are some trains of certain ideas which leave prints of themselves about our eyes and eye-brows; and there is a consciousness of it, somewhere about the heart, which serves but to make these etchings the stronger—we see, spell, and put them together without a dictionary.

Ha! ha! He, hee! cried La Guyol and La Sabatiere, looking close at each others prints——Ho, ho! cried La Battarelle, and Maronette, doing the same:——Whist, cried one——st, st,—said a second.....hush, quoth a third.....poo, poo, replied a forth.....gramercy! cried the Lady Carnavalette.....'twas she who bewhisker'd St. Bridget.

La Fosseuse drew her bodkin from the knot of her hair, and having traced the outline of a small whisker, with the blunt end of it, upon one side of her upper lip, put it into La Rebours's hand—La Rebours shook her head.

The lady Baussiere cough'd thrice into the inside of her muff—La Guyol smiled—Fy, said the lady Baussiere. The Queen of Navarre touched her eye with the tip of her fore-finger—as much as to say, I understand you all.

'Twas plain to the whole court, the word was ruined: La Fosseuse had given it a wound, and it was not the better for passing thro' all these defiles. It made a faint stand, however, for a few months; by the expiration of which, the Sieur de Croix,

finding it high time to leave Navarre for want of whiskers....the word in course became indecent, and (after a few efforts) absolutely unfit for use.

The best word, in the best language of the best world, must have suffered under such combinations.....The curate of d'Estella wrote a book against them, setting forth the dangers of accessory ideas, and warning the Navarrois against them.

Does not all the world know, said the curate d'Estella at the conclusion of his work, that Noses ran the same fate some centuries ago in most parts of Europe, which whiskers have now done in the kingdom of Navarre?——The evil indeed spread no farther then——but have not beds and bolsters, and night-caps and chamber-pots stood upon the brink of destruction ever since? Are not trouse, and placket-holes, and pump-handles—— and spigots and faucets, in danger still, from the same association!—Chastity, by nature the gentlest of all affections—give it but head—'tis like a ramping and a roaring lion.

The drift of the curate d'Estella's argument was not understood——They ran the scent the wrong way——The world bridled his ass at the tail—And when the extremes of DELICACY, and the beginnings of CONCUPISCENCE, hold their next provincial chapter together, they may decree that bawdy also.

## CHAP. II.

WHEN my father received the letter which brought him the melancholy account of my brother Bobby's death, he was busy calculating the expense of his riding post from Calais to Paris, and so on to Lyons.

'Twas a most inauspicious journey; my father having had every foot of it to travel over again, and his calculation to begin afresh, when he had almost got to the end of it, by Obadiah's opening the door, to acquaint him the family was out of yeast——and to ask, whether he might not take the great coach-horse early in the morning and ride in search of some.———With all my heart, Obadiah, said my father, (pursuing his journey) ——take the coach-horse, and welcome.——But he wants a shoe, poor creature! said Obadiah—Poor creature! said my uncle Toby, vibrating the note back again, like a string in unison. Then ride the Scotch horse, quoth my father, hastily—He cannot bear a saddle upon his back, quoth Obadiah, for the whole world.——The devil's in that horse; then take PATRIOT, cried my father, and shut the door——PATRIOT is sold, said Obadiah.——Here's for you! cried my father, making a pause, and looking in my uncle Toby's face, as if the thing had not been a matter of fact——Your worship ordered me to sell him last April, said Obadiah——Then go on foot for your pains, cried my father.——I had much rather walk than ride, said Obadiah, shutting the door.

What plagues! cried my father, going on with his calculation.—But the waters are out, said Obadiah,—opening the door again.

Cardan, or Budæus, orPetrarch, or Stella...or possibly it may be some divine or father of the church, St. Austin, or St. Cyprian, or Bernard, who affirms, that it is an irresistible and natural passion, to weep for the loss of our friends or childeren—and Seneca (I'm positive) tells us somewhere, that such griefs evacuate themselves best by that particular channel....And accordingly, we find, that David wept for his son Absalom....Adrian for his Antoninus....Niobe for her children....and that Apollodorus and Crito both shed tears for Socrates before his death.

My father managed his affliction otherwise ;—and indeed differently from most men, either ancient or modern ;. for he neither wept it away, as the Hebrews and the Romans—or slept it off, as the Laplanders—or hang'd it, as the English—or drown'd it, as the Germans—nor did he curse it, or damn it, or excommunicate it, or rhyme it, or lillabullerro it—

He got rid of it, however.

Will your worships give me leave to squeeze in a story between these two pages ?—

When Tully was bereft of his dear daughter Tullia, at first he laid it to his heart,—he listened to the voice of nature, and modulated his own unto it.—O my Tullia ! my daughter ! my child ! ——still, still, still,—'twas O my Tullia ! my Tullia !—Methinks I see my Tullia, I hear my Tullia, I talk with my Tullia.——But as soon as he began to look into the stores of philosophy, and consider how many excellent things might be said upon the occasion—no body upon earth can conceive, says the great orator, how happy, how joyful it made me.—

My father was as proud of his eloquence as MARCUS TULLIUS CICERO could be for his life, and, for aught I am convinced of to the contrary at present, with as much reason: It was indeed his strength——and his weakness too.——— His strength——for he was by nature eloquent ———and his weakness———for he was hourly a dupe to it:——And provided an occasion in life would but permit him to show his talents, or say either a wise thing, a witty, or a shrewd one—(bating the case of a systematic misfortune)—he had all he wanted——A blessing which tied up my father's tongue, and a misfortune which set it loose with a good grace, were pretty equal: Sometimes, indeed, the misfortune was the better of the two; for instance, where the pleasure of the harangue was as ten, and the pain of the misfortune but as five—my father gained half in half, and consequently was as well again off, as if it never had befallen him.

This clue will unravel, what otherwise would seem very inconsistent in my father's domestic character; and it is this, that in the provocations arising from the neglects and blunders of servants, or other mishaps unavoidable in a family, his anger, or rather the duration of it, eternally ran counter to all conjecture.

My father had a favorite little mare, which he had consigned over to a most beautiful Arabian horse, in order to have a pad out of her for his own riding; he was sanguine in all his projects; so talked about his pad every day with as absolute a security, as if it had been reared, broke—— and bridled and saddled at his door ready for mounting. By some neglect or other in Obadiah, it so fell out, that my father's expectations

were answered with nothing better than a mule and as ugly a beast of the kind as ever was produced.

My mother and my uncle Toby expected my father would be the death of Obadiah—and that there would never be an end of the disaster.—— See here! you rascal, cried my father, pointing to the mule, what you have done.—It was not I, said Obadiah.—How do I know that? replied my father.

Triumph swam in my father's eyes, at the repartee—the Attick salt brought water into them —and so Obadiah heard no more about it.

Now let us go back to my brother's death.

Philosophy has a fine saying for every thing.— For death, it has an entire set; the misery was, they all at once rushed so into my father's head, that 'twas difficult to string them together, so as to make any thing of a consistent show out of them—He took them as they came.

"'Tis an inevitable chance—the first statute in "Magna Charta—it is an everlasting act of par- "liament, my dear brother,—all must die.

"If my son could not have died, it had been "matter of wonder,—not that he is dead.

"Monarchs and princes dance in the same "ring with us,

"————To die is the great debt and tribute "due unto nature: Tombs and mouments, "which should prepetuate our memories, pay it "*themselves*; and the proudest pyramid of

"them all, which wealth and science have erect-
"ed, has lost its apex, and stands obtruncated in
"the traveller's horizon."—(My father found he got great ease and went on)——"Kingdoms and
"provinces, and towns and cities, have they not
"their periods? and when those principles and
"powers, which at first cemented and put them
"together, have performed their several evolutions,
"they fell back."————Brother Shandy, said my uncle Toby, laying down his pipe at the word evolutions——Revolutions, I meant, quoth my father—by heaven! I meant revolutions, brother Toby ——evolutions is nonsense.—'Tis not nonsense, —said my uncle Toby.——But is it not nonsense to break the thread of such a discourse, upon such an occasion? cried my father————do not —dear Toby, continued he, taking him by the hand, do not—do not, I beseech thee, interrupt me at this crisis. My uncle Toby put his pipe into his mouth.

"Where is Troy, and Mycene, and Thebes,
"and Delos, and Persepolis, and Agrigentum,"
——continued my father, taking up his book of post-roads, which he had laid down——"What
"is become, brother Toby, of Nineveh and Ba-
"bylon, of Cyzicum and Mitylene?—The fairest
"towns that ever the sun rose upon, are now no
"more: The names only are left, and those (for
"many of them are wrong spelt) are falling
"themselves by piece-meal to decay, and in
"length of time, will be forgotten, and involved
"with every thing in a perpetual night: The
"world itself, brother Toby, must—must come
"to an end.

"Returning out of Asia, when I sailed from
"Ægina towards Megara," (when can this have been? *thought* my uncle Toby) "I began to view the

"country round about—Ægina was behind me,
"Megara was before, Pyræus on the right hand,
"Corinth on the left.—What flourishing towns,
"now prostrate upon the earth! Alas! alas!
"said I to myself, that man should disturb his
"soul for the loss of a child, when so much as
"this lies awfully buried in his presence.———
"Remember; said I to myself again—remem-
"ber thou art a man."—

Now, my uncle Toby knew not that this last paragraph was an extract of Servius Sulpicius's consolatory letter to Tully.——He had as little skill, honest man, in the fragments, as he had in the whole pieces of antiquity.———And as my father, whilst he was concerned in the Turkey trade, had been three or four different times in the Levant, in one of which he had staid a whole year and a half at Zant, my uncle Toby naturally concluded, that, in some one of these periods, he had taken a trip across the Archipelago into Asia; and that all this sailing affair, with Ægina behind, and Megara before, and Pyræus on the right hand, &c. &c.—was nothing more than the true course of my father's voyage and reflections.———'Twas certainly in his manner,—and many an undertaking critic would have built two stories higher upon worse foundations.——And pray, brother, quoth my uncle Toby, laying the end of his pipe upon my father's hand, in a kindly way of interruption—but waiting till he finished the account—what year of our Lord was this?—'Twas no year of our Lord, replied my father.—That's impossible, cried my uncle Toby——Simpleton! said my father,—'twas forty years before Christ was born.

My uncle Toby had but two things for it; either *to suppose* his brother to be the wandering

Jew, or that his misfortunes had disordered his brain——"May the Lord God of heaven and earth "protect and restore him," said my uncle Toby, praying silently for my father, and with tears in his eyes.

—My father placed the tears to a proper account, and went on with his harangue with great spirit.

"There is not such great odds, brother Toby, "betwixt good and evil, as the world imagines," —this way of setting off, by the bye, was not likely to cure my uncle Toby's suspicions.

——"Labor, sorrow, grief, sickness, want, and "woe, are the sauces of life."—Much good may do them—said my uncle Toby, to himself.—— "My son is dead!—so much the better;—'tis a "shame, in such a tempest, to have but one anchor.

"But he is gone for ever from us!—be it so. "He is gone from under the hands of his barber, "before he was bald—He is but risen from a feast "before he was surfeited—from a banquet before "he had got drunken.

"The Thracians wept when a child was born," (and we were very near it, quoth my uncle Toby) —"and feasted and made merry when a man "went out of the world; and with reason—— "Death opens the gate of fame, and shuts the "gate of envy after it—it unlooses the chain of "the captive, and puts the bondsman's task into "another man's hand.

"Show me the man, who knows what life is, "who dreads it, and I'll show thee a prisoner who "dreads *his liberty*."

Is it not better, my dear brother Toby, (for mark—our appetites are but diseases)—is it not better not to hunger at all, than to eat?—not to thirst, than to take physic to cure it?

Is it not better to be freed from cares and agues, from love and melancholy, and the other hot and cold fits of life, than, like a galled traveller, who comes weary to his inn, to be bound to begin his journey afresh?

There is no terror, brother Toby, in its looks, but what it borrows from groans and convulsions—and the blowing of noses, and the wiping away of tears with the bottoms of curtains in a dying man's room.——Strip it of these, what is it?——'Tis better in battle than in bed, said my uncle Toby.——Take away its herses, its mutes, and its mourning,—its plumes, scutcheons, and other mechanic aids——what is it?—Better in battle! continued my father, smiling; for he had absolutely forgot my brother Bobby—'tis terrible no way——for consider, brother Toby,—when we are—death is not;—and when death is—we are not.—My uncle Toby laid down his pipe, to consider the proposition; my father's eloquence was too rapid to stay for any man;—away it went—and hurried my uncle Toby's ideas along with it.

For this reason, continued my father, 'tis worthy to recollect, how little alteration, in great men, the approaches of death have made—Vespasian died at a jest upon his closestool.....Galba with a sentence....Septimius in a dispatch....Tiberius in dissimulation, and Cæsar Augustus in a compliment....I hope 'twas a sincere one....quoth my uncle Toby.

—*'Twas to* his wife said my father.

## CHAP. IV.

—AND lastly——for all the choice anecdotes which history can produce of this matter, continued my father,....this, like the gilded dome which covers in the fabric—crowns all.—

'Tis of Cornelius Gallus, the prætor,—which, I dare say, brother Toby you have read——I dare say I have not, replied my uncle.——He died said my father, as * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

——————And if it was with his wife, said my uncle Toby——there could be no hurt in it.——That's more than I know, replied my father.

## CHAP. V.

MY mother was going very gingerly in the dark, along the passage which led to the parlor, as my uncle Toby pronounced the word wife.——'Tis a shrill penetrating sound of itself, and Obadiah had helped it, by leaving the door a little a-jar, so that my mother heard enough of it, to imagine herself the subject of the conversation: So, laying the edge of her finger across her two lips, holding in her breath, and bending her head a little downwards, with a twist of her neck —(*not towards* the door, but from it, by which

means her ear was brought to the chink).....she listened with all her powers :.....The listening slave, with the goddess of Silence at his back, could not have given a finer thought for an intaglio.

In this attitude, I am determined to let her stand for five minutes, till I bring up the affairs of the kitchen (as Rapin does those of the church) to the same period.

## CHAP. VI.

THO' in one sense, our family was certainly a simple machine, as it consisted of a few wheels; yet there was thus much to be said for it, that these wheels were set in motion by so many different springs, and acted one upon the other from such a variety of strange principles and impulses.....that tho' it was a simple machine, it had all the honor and advantages of a complex one....and a number of as odd movements within it, as ever were beheld in the inside of a Dutch silk-mill.

Amongst these there was one, I am going to speak of, in which, perhaps, it was not altogether so singular, as in many others; and it was this, that whatever motion, debate, harangue, dialogue, project, or dissertation, was going forwards in the parlor, there was generally another, at the same time, and upon the same subject, running parallel along with it in the kitchen.

Now, to bring this about, whenever an extraordinary message, or letter, was delivered in the

parlor....or a discourse suspended till a servant went out....or the lines of discontent were observed to hang upon the brows of my father or mother..... or, in short, when any thing was supposed to be upon the tapis worth knowing or listening to, 'twas the rule to leave the door, not absolutely shut, but somewhat a-jar....as it stands just now,....which under covert of the bad hinge, (and that possibly might be one of the many reasons why it was never mended) it was not difficult to manage; by which means, in all these cases, a passage was generally left, not, indeed, as wide as the Dardanelles, but wide enough, for all that, to carry on as much of this windward trade, as was sufficient to save my father the trouble of governing his house: .....My mother at this moment stands profiting by it..... Obadiah did the same thing as soon as he had left the letter upon the table, which brought the news of my brother's death; so that before my father had well got over his surprise, and entered upon his harangue,....had Trim got upon his legs, to speak his sentiments upon the subject.

A curious observer of nature, had he been worth the inventory of all Job's stock.....tho' by the bye, your curious observers are seldom worth a groat .....would have given the half of it, to have heard Corporal Trim and my father, two orators so contrasted by nature and education, haranguing over the same bier.

My father, a man of deep reading.....prompt memory.....with Cato, and Seneca, and Epictetus at his finger ends.

The Corporal.....with nothing.....to remember.... of no deeper reading than his muster-roll.....or greater names at his finger ends than the contents of it.

The one proceeding from period to period, by metaphor and allusion, and striking the fancy as he went along (as men of wit and fancy do) with the entertainment and pleasantry of his pictures and images.

The other, without wit, or antithesis, or point, or turn, this way or that; but leaving the images on one side, and the pictures on the other, going straight forwards, as nature could lead him, to the heart. O Trim! would to heaven thou hadst a better historian!.....would!.....thy historian had a better pair of breeches!.....O ye critics! will nothing melt you?

## CHAP. VII.

.....MY young master in London is dead! said Obadiah.....

.....A green satin night-gown of my mother's, which had been twice scoured, was the first idea which Obadiah's exclamation brought into Susannah's head.....Well might Locke write a chapter upon the imperfections of words.....Then, quoth Susannah, we must all go into mourning..... But note a second time: The word mourning, notwithstanding Susannah made use of it herself ....failed also of doing its office; it excited not one single idea, tinged either with grey or black,..... all was green.....The green satin night-gown hung there still.

.....O! 'twill be the death of my poor *mistress, cried* Susannah.....My mother's whole

wardrobe followed.....What a procession ! her red damask,.....her orange-tawny,.....her white and yellow lutestrings,.....her brown taffata,..... her bone-laced caps, her bed-gowns, and comfortable under petticoats.....Not a rag was left behind,....." No.....she will never look up again," said Susannah.

We had a fat foolish scullion.....my father, I think, kept her for her simplicity ;.....she had been all autumn struggling with a dropsy.....He is dead ! said Obadiah ;.....he is certainly dead !..... So am not I, said the foolish scullion.

.....Here is sad news, Trim ! cried Susannah, wiping her eyes as Trim stepp'd into the kitchen, .....master Bobby is dead and buried....the funeral was an interpolation of Susannah's....we shall have all to go into mourning, said Susannah.

I hope not, said Trim.....You hope not ! cried Susannah earnestly,.....The mourning ran not in Trim's head, whatever it did in Susannah's .....I hope, said Trim, explaining himself, I hope in God the news is not true. I heard the letter read with my own ears, answered Obadiah ; and we shall have a terrible piece of work of it in stubbing the Ox-moor.....Oh ! he's dead, said Susannah .....As sure, said the scullion, as I am alive.

I lament for him from my heart and my soul, said Trim, fetching a sigh.....Poor creature ! .....poor boy ! poor gentleman !

.....He was alive last Whitsuntide, said the coachman.....Whitsuntide ! alas ! cried Trim, extending his right arm, and falling instantly into the same attitude in which he read the sermon..... what is Whitsuntide, Jonathan, (for that was the

coachman's name) or Shrovetide, or any tide or time past, to this? Are we not here now, continued the Corporal, (striking the end of his stick perpendicularly upon the floor, so as to give an idea of health and stability).....and are we not....(dropping his hat upon the ground) gone! in a moment? .....'Twas infinitely striking! Susannah burst into a flood of tears.....We are not stocks and stones.....Jonathan, Obadiah, the cook-maid, all melted.....The foolish fat scullion herself, who was scouring a fish-kettle upon her knees, was roused with it.....The whole kitchen crowded about the Corporal.

Now as I perceive plainly, that the preservation of our constitution in church and state,.....and possibly the preservation of the whole world,.....or, what is the same thing, the distribution and balance of its property and power, may in time to come depend greatly upon the right understanding of this stroke of the Corporal's eloquence..... I do demand your attention;.....your worships and reverences, for any ten pages together, take them where you will in any other part of the work, shall sleep for it at your ease.

I said, "we are not stocks and stones".....'tis very well. I should have added, nor are we angels.....I wish we were,....but men clothed with bodies, and governed by our imaginations;....and what a junketting piece of work of it there is, betwixt these and our seven senses, especially some of them; for my own part, I own it, I am ashamed to confess. Let it suffice to affirm, that of all the senses, the eye (for I absolutely deny the touch, tho' most of your Barbati, I know, are for it) has the quickest commerce with the soul,.....gives a smarter stroke, and leaves something more inexpressible upon the fancy, than words can either *convey....or* sometimes get rid of.

—I've gone a little about—no matter, 'tis for health—let us only carry it back in our mind to the mortality of Trim's hat—" Are we not here now—and gone in a moment?"———There was nothing in the sentence—'twas one of your self-evident truths we have the advantage of hearing every day; and if Trim had not trusted more to his hat than his head—he had made nothing at all of it.

——" Are we not here now,"—continued the Corporal, " and are we not"—(dropping his hat plumb upon the ground——and pausing, before he pronounced the word) "gone! in a moment?" The descent of the hat was as if a heavy lump of clay had been kneaded into the crown of it.—Nothing could have expressed the sentiment of mortality, of which it was the type and forerunner, like it;—his hand seemed to vanish from under it;—it fell dead,—the Corporal's eye fixed upon it, as upon a corpse,—and Susannah burst into a flood of tears.

Now——ten thousand, and ten thousand times ten thousand (for matter and motion are infinite) are the ways by which a hat may be dropped upon the ground, without any effect.—Had he flung it, or thrown it, or cast it, or skimmed it, or squirted it, or let it slip or fall in any possible direction under heaven,—or in the best direction that could be given to it,—had he dropped it like a goose—like a puppy—like an ass—or, in doing it, or even after he had done it, had he looked like a fool—like a ninny—like a nincompoop—it had failed, and the effect upon the heart had been lost.

Ye who govern this mighty world and its mighty concerns with the engines of eloquence, ——who heat it, and cool it, and melt, and mel-

lify it,—and then harden it again to your purpose ——Ye who wind and turn the passions with this great windlass,—and, having done it, lead the owners of them whither ye think meet——Ye, lastly, who drive—and why not? Ye also who are driven, like turkeys to market, with a stick and a red clout——meditate,—mediate, I beseech you, upon Trim's hat.

## CHAP. VIII.

STAY—I have a small account to settle with the reader, before Trim can go on with his harangue.—It shall be done in two minutes.—— Amongst many other book-debts, all of which I shall discharge in due time,—I own myself a debtor to the world for two items,—a chapter upon chamber-maids and button-holes, which, in the former part of my work, I promised and fully intended to pay off this year: But some of your worships and reverences telling me, that the two subjects, especially so connected together, might endanger the morals of the world,—I pray the chapter upon chamber-maids and button-holes may be forgiven me,——and that they will accept of the last chapter in lieu of it; which is nothing, an't please your reverences, but a chapter of chamber-maids, green gowns, and old hats.

Trim took his off the ground,——put it upon his head, and then went on with his oration upon death, in the manner and form following.

## CHAP. IX.

——TO us, Jonathan, who know not what want or care is——who live here in the service of two of the best of masters—(bating, in my own case, his majesty King William the Third, whom I had the honor to serve both in Ireland and Flanders)—I own it, that from Whitsuntide to within three weeks of Christmas, 'tis not long—'tis like nothing;——but to those, Jonathan, who know what death is, and what havoc and destruction he can make, before a man can well wheel about—'tis like a whole age.——O Jonathan! 'twould make a good-natur'd man's heart bleed, to consider, continued the Corporal, (standing perpendicularly), how low many a brave and upright fellow has been laid since that time!—And trust me, Susy, added the Corporal, turning to Susannah, whose eyes were swimming in water—before that time comes round again,—many a bright eye will be dim—Susannah placed it to the right side of the page—she wept—but she curt'sied too. Are we not, continued Trim, looking still at Susannah—are we not like a flower of the field—(a tear of pride stole in betwixt every two tears of humiliation—else no tongue could have described Susannah's affliction)—is not all flesh grass?——'Tis clay,—'tis dirt——They all looked directly at the scullion;—the scullion had just been scouring a fish-kettle——It was not fair.

What is the finest face that ever man looked at! —I could hear Trim talk so for ever, cried Susannah—what is it!——(Susannah laid her hand upon Trim's shoulder)—but corruption?—Susannah took it off.

—Now I love you for this—and 'tis this delicious mixture within you, which makes you dear creatures what you are;—and he who hates you for it—all I can say of the matter, is, That he has either a pumkin for his head, or a pippin for his heart—and whenever he is dissected, 'twill be found so.

## CHAP. X.

WHETHER Susannah, by taking her hand too suddenly from off the Corporal's shoulder, (by the whisking about of her passions)—broke a little the chain of his reflections—

Or whether the Corporal began to be suspicious he had got into the doctor's quarters, and was talking more like the chaplain than himself—

Or whether - - - - - - - - - - - -

Or whether——for in all such cases a man of invention and parts may with pleasure fill a couple of pages with suppositions;——which of all these was the cause, let the curious physiologist, or the curious any body determine:—'Tis certain at least, the Corporal went on thus with his harangue.

For my own part, I declare it, that out of doors, I value not death at all:—Not this . . added the Corporal, snapping his fingers—but with an air, which no one but the Corporal could have given to the sentiment. In battle I value death not this . . . and let him not take me cowardly, like poor Joe Gibbons, in scouring his gun——What is he? A pull of a trigger——a push of a bayonet an inch *this* way or that——makes the difference.

Look along the line—to the right—see! Jacks down! well,—'tis worth a regiment of horse to him—No—'tis Dick. Then Jack's no worse. Never mind which,—we pass on;—in hot pursuit the wound itself which brings him is not felt;—the best way is to stand up to him;——the man who flies, is in ten times more danger than the man who marches up into his jaws.——I've look'd him, added the Corporal, an hundred times in the face,—and know what he is——He's nothing, Obadiah, at all in the field.——But he's very frightful in an house, quoth Obadiah.——I never mind it myself, said Jonathan, upon a coach-box.——It must, in my opinion, be most natural in bed, replied Susannah.——And could I escape him by creeping into the worst calf-skin that ever was made into a knapsack, I would do it there, said Trim—but that is nature.

Nature is nature, said Jonathan. And that is the reason, cried Susannah, I so much pity my mistress———She will never get the better of it.—Now I pity the captain the most of any one in the family, answered Trim.—Madam will get ease of heart in weeping—and the Squire in talking about it,—but my poor master will keep it all in silence to himself.——I shall hear him sigh in his bed for a whole month together, as he did for Lieutenant Le Fevre. An' please your honor, do not sigh so piteously, I would say to him, as I lay beside him. I cannot help it, Trim, my master would say;—'tis so melancholy an accident—I cannot get it off my heart.—Your honor fears not death yourself—I hope, Trim, I fear nothing, he would say, but the doing a wrong thing. Well, he would add, whatever betides, I will take care of Le Fevre's boy.—And with that, like a quieting draught, his honor would fall asleep.

I like to hear Trim's stories about the captain, said Susannah.—He is a kindly-hearted gentleman, said Obadiah, as ever lived.—Ay—and as brave a one too, said the Corporal, as ever stept before a platoon.—There never was a better officer in the king's army,——or a better man in God's world; for he would march up to the mouth of a cannon, tho' he saw the lighted match at the very touch-hole,—and yet, for all that, he has a heart as soft as a child for other people;—he would not hurt a chicken.—I would sooner, quoth Jonathan, drive such a gentleman for seven pounds a year—than some for eight——Thank thee, Jonathan! for thy twenty shillings—as much, Jonathan, said the Corporal, shaking him by the hand, as if thou hadst put the money into my own pocket. I would serve him to the day of my death, out of love. He is a friend and a brother to me: And could I be sure my poor brother Tom was dead—continned the Corporal, taking out his handkerchief,—was I worth ten thousand pounds, I would leave every shilling of it to the captain—Trim could not refrain from tears at this testamentary proof he gave of his affection to his master.—The whole kitchen was affected. Do tell us this story of the poor lieutenant, said Susannah—With all my heart, answered the Corporal.

Susannah, the cook, Jonathan, Obadiah, and Corporal Trim, formed a circle about the fire; and as soon as the scullion had shut the kitchen door—the Corporal began.

## CHAP. XI.

*I AM a* Turk if I had not as much forgot my *mother,* as if Nature had plastered me up, and

set me down naked upon the banks of the river Nile, without one. Your most obedient servant, madam,—I've cost you a great deal of trouble—I wish it may answer——But you have left a crack in my back—and here's a great piece fallen off here before ;—and what must I do with this foot ?—I shall never reach England with it.

For my own part I never wonder at any thing ; —and so often has my judgment deceived me in my life, that I always suspect it, right or wrong, —at least I am seldom hot upon cold subjects. For all this, I reverence truth as much as any body ; and when it has slipped us, if a man will but take me by thy hand, and go quietly and search for it, as for a thing we have both lost, and can neither of us do well without,—I'll go to the world's end with him.——But I hate disputes, —and therefore (bating religious points, or such as touch society) I would almost subscribe to any thing which does not choak me in the first passage, rather than be drawn into one.—But I cannot bear suffocation, and bad smells worst of all. For which reasons, I resolved from the beginning, That if ever the army of martyrs was to be augmented,—or a new one raised,—I would have no hand in it, one way or t'other.

## CHAP. XII.

——BUT to return to my mother.——My uncle Toby's opinion, madam, "that there could be no harm in Cornelius Gallus the Roman prætor's lying with his wife,"—or rather the last word of that opinion,—(for it was all my mother heard of it) caught hold of her by the *weak part of the* whole sex: You shall not mistake

me,....I mean her curiosity,—she instantly concluded herself the subject of the conversation; and, with that prepossession upon her fancy, you will readily conceive, every word my father said, was accommodated either to herself, or family concerns.

Pray, madam, in what street does the lady live, who would not have done the same?———

From the strange mode of Cornelius's death, my father had made a transition to that of Socrates, and was giving my uncle Toby an abstract of his pleading before his judges;....'twas irresistible:——Not the oration of Socrates,——but my father's temptation to it——He had wrote the *Life of Socrates himself the year before he left off trade, which, I fear, was the mean of hastening him out of it;....so that no one was able to set out with so full a sail, and in so swelling a tide of heroic loftiness upon the occasion, as my father was. Not a period in Socrates's oration, which closed with a shorter word than transmigration or annihilation, or a worse thought in the middle of it than, To be——or not to be,——the entering upon a new and untried state of things,....or, upon a long, a profound and peaceful sleep, without dreams, without disturbance:

That we and our children were born to die,..... but neither of us born to be slaves....No....there I mistake; that was part of Eleazer's oration, as recorded by Josephus (de bel. Judaic.)——Eleazer owns he had it from the philosophers of In-

* *This book my father would never consent to publish: 'tis in manuscript with some other tracts of his, in the family, all or most of which, will be printed in due time.*

dia; in all liklihood Alexander the Great, in his irruption into India, after he had over-run Persia, amongst the many things he stole,....stole that sentiment also; by which means, it was carried, if not all the way by himself, (for we all know he died at Babylon) at least by some of his marauders, into Greece,....from Greece it got to Rome, ——From Rome to France,——and from France to England :....So things come round....

By land carriage, I can conceive no other way. —◆——By water the sentiment might easily have come down the Ganges into the Sinus Gangeticus, or Bay of Bengal, and so into the Indian Sea; and following the course of trade, (the way from India by the Cape of Good Hope being then unknown,) might be carried, with other drugs and spices, up the Red Sea to Joddah, the port of Mecca, or else to Tor or Suez, towns at the bottom of the gulf; and from thence by caravans to Coptos, but three days journey distant, so down the Nile directly to Alexandria, where the SENTIMENT would be landed at the very foot of the great stair-case of the Alexandrian library,———and from that storehouse it would be fetched....Bless me! what a trade was driven by the learned in those days!

## CHAP. XIII.

——NOW my father had a way a little like that of Job's, in case there ever was such a man——if not, there's an end of the matter.

Tho' by the bye, because your learned men find some difficulty in fixing the precise era in which so great a man lived;....whether, for in-

stance, before or after the patriarchs, &c.....to vote, therefore, that he never lived at all, is a little cruel,....'tis not doing as they would be done by. Happen that as it may....my father, I say, had a way, when things went extremely wrong with him, especially upon the first sally of his impatience,....of wondering why he was begot,——wishing himself dead,——sometimes worse:——And when the provocation ran high, and grief touch'd his lips with more than ordinary powers, ....Sir, you scarce could have distinguished him from Socrates himself.———Every word would breathe the sentiments of a soul disdaining life, and careless about all its issues; for which reason, tho' my mother was a woman of no deep reading, yet the abstract of Socrates's oration, which my father was giving my uncle Toby, was not altogether new to her. She listened to it with composed intelligence, and would have done so to the end of the chapter, had not my father plunged (which he had no occasion to have done) into that part of the pleading where the great philosopher reckons up his connections, his alliances and children; but renounces a security to be so won, by working upon the passions of his judges——"I have friends....I have relations,....I have three desolate children," says Socrates.

.....Then, cried my mother, opening the door, you have one more, Mr. Shandy, than I know of.

By heaven! I have one less....said my father, getting up and walking out of the room.

## CHAP. XIV.

——THEY are Socrates's children, said my uncle Toby. He has been dead a hundred years ago, replied my mother.

My uncle Toby was no chronologer.....so not caring to advance a step but upon safe ground, he laid down his pipe deliberately upon the table, and rising up, and taking my mother most kindly by the hand, without saying another word, either good or bad to her, he led her out after my father, that he might finish the ecclaircissement himself.

## CHAP. XV.

HAD this volume been a farce, which, unless every one's life and opinions are to be looked upon as a farce, as well as mine, I see no reason to suppose....the last chapter, sir, had finished the first act of it, and then this chapter must have set off thus.

Ptr....r....r.....ing—twing—twang—prut—trut ——'tis a cursed bad fiddle—Do you know whether my fiddle's in tune or no?—trut—prut—— They should be fifths.——'Tis wickedly strung— tr....a.e.i.o.u.——twang———The bridge is a mile too high, and the sound-post absolutely down ——else—trut—prut—hark! 'tis not so bad a tone——Diddle diddle, diddle diddle, diddle diddle dum. There is nothing in playing before good judges: But there's a man there—no——not him with a bundle under his arm———the grave man in black—'Sdeath! not the gentleman with the sword on——Sir, I had rather play a Caprichio to Calliope herself, than draw my bow across my fiddle before that very man; and yet I'll stake my Cremona to a jew's trump, which is the greatest musical odds that ever were laid, that I will this moment stop three hundred and fifty leagues out of tune upon my fiddle, without punishing one single *nerve that* belongs to him.——Twaddle

diddle, tweddle diddle———dwiddle diddle, twoddle diddle,——twuddle diddle—prut—trut—krish—krash—krush.——I've undone you, sir——— but see he is no worse ;—and was Apollo to take his fiddle after me, he can make him no better.

Diddle diddle, diddle, diddle, diddle diddle—— hum, dum, drum.

——Your worships and your reverences love music———and God has made you all with good ears——and some of you play delightfully yourselves——trut-prut,——prut-trut.

O ! there is——whom I could sit and hear whole days——whose talents lie in making what he fiddles to be felt,——who inspires me with his joys and hopes, and puts the most hidden springs of my heart into motion——if you would borrow five guineas of me, sir,————which is generally ten guineas more than I have to spare—— or you, messrs. Apothecary and Taylor, want your bills paying—that's your time.

## CHAP. XVI.

THE first thing which entered my father's head, after affairs were a little settled in the family, and Susannah had got possession of my mother's green satin night gown——was to sit down coolly, after the example of Xenophon, and write a TRISTRA-pædia, or system of education for me ; collecting, first, for that purpose, his own scattered thoughts, counsels, and notions ; and binding them together, so as to form an INSTITUTE for the government of my *childhood* and adolescence. I was my father's

last stake———,—he had lost my brother Bobby entirely,————he had lost, by his own computation, full three-fourths of me———that is, he had been unfortunate in his three first great casts for me—my geniture, nose, and name,—there was but this one left; and accordingly, my father gave himself up to it with as much devotion as ever my uncle Toby had done to his doctrine of projectiles.—The difference betwixt them was, that my uncle Toby drew his whole knowledge of projectiles from Nicolas Tartaglia.———My father spun his, every thread of it, out of his own brain,—or had so reeled and cross-twisted what all other spinners and spinsters had spun before him, that 'twas pretty near the same torture to him.

In about three years, or something more, my father had got advanced almost into the middle of his work. Like all other writers, he met with disappointments.—He imagined he should be able to bring whatever he had to say, into so small a compass, that when it was finished and bound, it might be rolled up in my mother's hussive.——Matter grows under our hands.——Let no man say,—"Come—I'll write a duodecimo."

My father gave himself up to it, however, with the most painful diligence, proceeding step by step, in every line, with the same kind of caution and circumspection (though I cannot say upon quite so religious a principle) as was used by John de la Casse, the lord archbishop of Benevento, in compassing his Galatea; in which his Grace of Benevento spent near forty years of his life; and when the thing came out, it was not above half the size of the thickness of a Rider's almanac.—How the holy man managed the affair, unless he spent the greatest part of his time in combing his whiskers, or playing at primero with

his chaplain,—would pose any mortal not let it into the true secret ;—and therefore, 'tis worth explaining to the world, was it only for the encouragement of those few in it, who write, not so much to be fed—as to be famous.

I own, had John de la Casse, the archbishop of Benevento, for whose memory (notwithstanding his Galatea) I retain the highest veneration,—— had he been, sir, a slender clerk,—of dull wit—slow parts—costive head, and so forth,—he and his Galatea might have jogged on together to the age of Methuselah for me—the phenomenon had not been worth a parenthesis.

But the reverse of this was the truth : John de la Casse was a genius of fine parts and fertile fancy ; and yet, with all these great advantages of nature, which should have pricked him forwards with his Galatea, he lay under an impuissance, at the same time, of advancing above a line and a half in the compass of a whole summer's day. This disability in his Grace arose from an opinion he was afflicted with,—which opinion was this, viz. That whenever a christian was writing a book (not for his private amusement, but) where his intent and purpose was, bona fide, to print and publish it to the world, his first thoughts were always the temptations of the evil one.——This was the state of ordinary writers : But when a personage of venerable character and high station, either in church or state, once turned author,—— he maintained, that, from the very moment he took pen in hand——all the devils in hell broke out of their holes to cajole him——'Twas term-time with them,——every thought first and last, was captious ;—how specious and good soever,—— 'twas all one ;—in whatever form or colour it pre-

sented itself to the imagination,—'twas still a stroke of one or other of 'em levelled at him, and was to be fenced off.—So that the life of a writer, whatever he might fancy to the contrary, was not so much a state of composition, as a state of warfare; and his probation in it, precisely that of any other man militant upon earth, both depending alike, not half so much upon the degrees of his WIT—as his resistance.

My father was hugely pleased with this theory of John de la Casse, archbishop of Benevento; and (had it not cramped him a little in his creed) I believe would have given ten of the best acres in the Shandy estate, to have been the broacher of it.——How far my father actually believed in the devil, will be seen, when I come to speak of my father's religious notions, in the progress of this work; 'tis enough to say here, as he could not have the honor of it, in the literal sense of the doctrine—he took up with the allegory of it; —and would often say, especially when his pen was a little retrogade, there was as much good meaning, truth, and knowledge couched under the veil of John de la Casse's parabolical representation,——as was to be found in any one poetic fiction, or mystic record of antiquity.—Prejudice of education he would say, is the devil——and the multitudes of them which we suck in with our mother's milk—are the devil and all—We are haunted with them, brother Toby, in all our lucubrations and researches; and, was a man fool enough to submit tamely to what they obtruded upon him,...what would his book be? Nothing, he would add, throwing his pen away with a vengeance,—nothing but a farrago of the clack of nurses, and of the nonsense of the old women (of both sexes) throughout the kingdom.

This is the best account I am determined to give of the slow progress my father made in his Tristra-pædia; at which (as I said) he was three years and something more, indefatigably at work, and at last, had scarce completed, by his own reckoning, one half of his undertaking: The misfortune was, that I was all that time totally neglected and abandoned to my mother: And, what was almost as bad, by the very delay, the first part of the work, upon which my father had spent the most of his pains, was rendered entirely useless—every day a page or two became of no consequence.

—Certainly it was ordained as a scourge upon the pride of human wisdom, that the wisest of us all should thus outwit ourselves, and eternally forego our purposes in the intemperate act of pursuing them.

In short, my father was so long in all his acts of resistance,—or, in other words—he advanced so very slow with his work, and I began to live and get forwards at such a rate, that, if an event had not happened,—which, when we get to it, if it can be told with decency, shall not be concealed a moment from my reader—I verily believe, I had put by my father, and left him drawing a sun-dial, for no better purpose than to be buried under ground.

## CHAP. XVII.

———'TWAS nothing,——I did not lose two drops of blood by it——'twas not worth calling in a surgeon, had he lived next door *to us.*—Doctor Slop made ten times more

of it than there was occasion: Some men rise, by the art of hanging great weights upon small wires,—and I am this day (August the 10th 1761) paying part of the price of this man's reputation.—O,'twould provoke a stone, to see how things are carried on in this world!—The chamber-maid had left no ******* *** under the bed.——Cannot you contrive, master, quoth Susannah, lifting up the sash with one hand, as she spoke, and helping me up into the window-seat with the other——cannot you manage, my dear, for a single time, to **** *** ** *** ****** ?

I was five years old——Susannah did not consider that nothing was well hung in our family,——so slap came the sash down like lightning upon us.——Nothing is left,——cried Susannah,——nothing is left,——for me, but to run my country.

My uncle Toby's house was a much kinder sanctuary; and so Susannah fled to it.

## CHAP. XVIII.

WHEN Susannah told the Corporal the misadventure of the sash, with all the circumstances which attended the murder of me, (as she called it)——the blood forsook his cheeks:—All accessaries in murder being principals—Trim's conscience told him he was as much to blame as Susannah; and, if the doctrine had been true, my uncle Toby had as much of the bloodshed to answer for to heaven as either of 'em;——so that neither reason or instinct, separate or together, could possibly have guided Susannah's steps to *so proper an asylum*. It is in vain to leave this,

to the reader's imagination:—To form any kind of hypothesis, that will render these propositions feasible, he must cudgel his brains sore,—and, to do it without——he must have such brains as no reader ever had before him.—Why should I put them either to trial or to torture? 'Tis my own affair: I'll explain it myself.

## CHAP. XIX.

'TIS a pity, Trim, said my uncle Toby, resting with his hand upon the Corporal's shoulder, as they both stood surveying their work,—that we have not a couple of field-pieces to mount in the gorge of that new redoubt;——'twould secure the lines all along there, and make the attack on that side quite complete:—Get me a couple cast, Trim.

Your honor shall have them, replied Trim, before to-morrow morning.

It was the joy of Trim's heart—nor was his fertile head ever at a loss for expedients in doing it, to supply my uncle Toby, in his campaigns, with whatever his fancy called for: Had it been his last crown, he would have sat down and hammered it into a paderero, to have prevented a single wish in his master. The Corporal had already,—what with cuting off the ends of my uncle Toby's spouts,—hacking and chiseling up the sides of his leaden gutters,—melting down his pewter shaving-bason,—and going at last, like Lewis the fourteenth, on to the top of the church, for spare ends, &c.—he had that very campaign, brought no less than eight new battering cannons, besides three demiculverins, into the field:

My uncle Toby's demand for two more pieces for the redoubt, had set the Corporal at work again; and no better resource offering, he had taken the two leaden weights from the nursery window: And as the sash pullies, when the lead was gone, were of no kind of use, he had taken them away also, to make a couple of wheels for one of their carriages.

He had dismantled every sash-window in my uncle Toby's house long before, in the very same way,—tho' not always in the same order; for sometimes the pullies had been wanted, and not the lead;—so then he began with the pullies,—and the pullies being picked out, then the lead became useless,—and so the lead went to pot too.

—A great MORAL might be picked handsomely out of this, but I have not time—'tis enough to say, wherever the demolition began, 'twas equally fatal to the sash-window.

## CHAP. XX.

THE Corporal had not taken his measures so badly in this stroke of artilleryship, but that he might have kept the matter entirely to himself, and left Susannah to have sustained the whole weight of the attack, as she could:—True courage is not content with coming off so.—The Corporal, whether as general or comptroller of the train—'twas no matter,—had done that, without which, as he imagined, the misfortune could never have happened, at least in Susannah's train.—How would *your* honors have behaved?—He *determined* at once, not to take shelter behind

sannah,—but to give it; and, with this resolution upon his mind, he marched up right into the parlor, to lay the whole manœuvre before my uncle Toby.

My uncle Toby had just then been giving Yorick an account of the battle of Steenkirk, and of the strange conduct of Count Solmes, in ordering the foot to halt, and the horse to march, where it could not act; which was directly contrary to the king's command, and proved the loss of the day.

There are incidents in some families, so pat to the purpose of what is going to follow,—they are scarce exceeded by the invention of a dramatic writer,—I mean of ancient days.

Trim, by the help of his forefinger laid flat upon the table, and the edge of his hand striking across it, at right angles, made a shift to tell his story so, that priests and virgins might have listened to it;—and the story being told,—the dialogue went on as follows.

## CHAP. XXI.

—I would be piquetted to death, cried the Corporal, as he concluded Susannah's story, before I would suffer the woman to come to any harm;—'twas my fault, an' please your honor,—not hers.

Corporal Trim, replied my uncle Toby, putting on his hat, which lay upon the table,—if any thing can be said to be a fault, when the service

absolutely requires it should be done,—'tis I certainly who deserve the blame—you obeyed your orders.

Had Count Solmes, Trim, done the same at the battle of Steenkirk, said Yorick, drolling a little upon the Corporal, who had been run over by a dragoon in the retreat,.....he had saved thee. .....Saved ! cried Trim, interrupting Yorick, and finishing the sentence for him after his own fashion,....he had saved five battalions, an' please your reverence, every soul of them :.....There was Cutts's.....continued the Corporal, clapping the fore-finger of his right hand upon the thumb of his left, and counting round his hand,....there was Cutts's.....Mackay's....Angus's.....Graham's.....and Leven's, all cut to pieces ;....and so had the English life-guards too, had it not been for some regiments upon the right, who marched up boldly to their relief, and received the enemy's fire in their faces, before any one of their own platoons discharged a musket :....They'll go to heaven for it....added Trim.....Trim is right, said my uncle Toby, nodding to Yorick,.....he's perfectly right. What signified his marching the horse, continued the Corporal, where the ground was so strait, and the French had such a nation of hedges, and copses, and ditches, and fell'd trees laid this way and that, to cover them, (as they always have) ?..... Count Solmes should have sent us.....we would have fired muzzle to muzzle with them, for their lives.....There was nothing to be done for the horse.....He had his foot shot off, however, for his pains, continued the Corporal, the very next campaign at Landen.....Poor Trim got his wound there, quoth my uncle Toby.....'Twas owing, an' please your honor, entirely to Count Solmes ;..... had we drubb'd them soundly at Steenkirk, they *would not have* fought us at Landen.....Possibly

not, Trim,.....said my uncle Toby ;.....tho' if they have the advantage of a wood, or you give them a moment's time to entrench themselves, they are a nation which will pop and pop for ever at you.....There is no way but to march coolly up to them,....receive their fire, and fall in upon them, pell-mell.....Ding-dong, added Trim..... Horse and foot,.....said my uncle Toby.....Helter-skelter, said Trim.....Right and left, cried my uncle Toby....Blood and wounds, shouted the Corporal : The battle raged.....Yorick drew his chair a little to one side for safety, and,after a moment's pause, my uncle Toby, sinking his voice a note .....resumed the discourse as follows.

## CHAP. XXII.

KING William, said my uncle Toby, addressing himself to Yorick, was so terribly provoked at Count Solmes, for disobeying his orders, that he would not suffer him to come into his presence for many months after.——I fear, answered Yorick, the Squire will be as much provoked at the Corporal, as the king at the Count.——— But 'twould be singularly hard in this case, continued he, if Corporal Trim, who has behaved so diametrically opposite to Count Solmes, should have the fate to be rewarded with the same disgrace :—Too oft, in this world, do things take that train—I would spring a mine, cried my uncle Toby, rising up, and blow up my fortifications, and my house with them, and we will perish under their ruins, ere I would stand by and see it. .....Trim directed a slight—but a grateful bow towards his master,—and so the chapter ends.

## CHAP. XXIII.

.....THEN, Yorick, replied my uncle Toby, you and I will lead the way abreast,..... and do you, Corporal, follow a few paces behind us.....And Susannah, an' please your honor, said Trim, shall be put in the rear.....'Twas an excellent disposition; and, in this order, without either drums beating, or colors flying, they marched slowly from my uncle Toby's house, to Shandy-hall.

.....I wish, said Trim, as they entered the door, .....instead of the sash-weights, I had cut off the church-spout, as I once thought to have done..... You have cut off spouts enow, replied Yorick.

## CHAP. XXIV.

AS many pictures as have been given of my father, how like him soever in different airs and attitudes,—not one, or all of them, can ever help the reader to any kind of preconception of how my father could think, speak or act, upon any untried occasion or occurrence of life.—There was that infinitude of oddities in him, and of chances along with it, by which handle, he would take a thing,.....it baffled, sir, all calculations..... The truth was, his road lay so very near one side, from that wherein most men travelled—that every object before him presented a face and section of itself, to his eye, altogether different from the plan

and elevation of it seen by the rest of mankind.—In other words, 'twas a different object,—and in course, was differently considered.

This is the true reason that my dear Jenny and I, as well as all the world besides us, have such eternal squabbles about nothing.—She looks at her outside,—I, at her in.——How is it possible we should agree about her value?

## CHAP. XXV.

'TIS a point settled,.....and I mention it for the comfort of * Confucius, who is apt to get entangled in telling a plain story,.....that provided he keeps along the line of his story, he may go backwards and forwards as he will,.....'tis still held to be no digression.

This being premised, I take the benefit of the act of going backwards myself.

## CHAP. XXVI.

FIFTY thousand pannier loads of devils——(not of the archbishop of Benevento's——I mean of Rabelais's devils) with their tails chopped off by their rumps, could not have made so diabolical a scream of it, as I did.....when the accident befel me: It summoned up my mother instantly into the nursery,.....so that Susannah

* *Mr. Shandy is supposed to mean* ***** ******, *Esq. member for* ******, *and not the Chinese Legislator.*

had but just time to make her escape down the back-stairs, as my mother came up the fore.

Now, tho' I was old enough to have told the story myself,—and young enough, I hope, to have done it without malignity; yet Susannah, in passing by the kitchen, for fear of accidents, had left it in short-hand with the cook—the cook had told it with a commentary to Jonathan, and Jonathan to Obadiah; so that by the time my father had rung the bell half a dozen times, to know what was the matter above,—was Obadiah enabled to give him a particular account of it, just as it had happened.———I thought as much, said my father, tucking up his night-gown;—— and so walked up stairs.

One would imagine from this—(tho' for my own part I somewhat question it)—that my father, before that time, had actually wrote that remarkable chapter in the Tristra-pædia, which to me is the most original and entertaining one in the whole book;——— and that is the chapter upon sash-windows, with a bitter philippic at the end of it, upon the forgetfulness of chamber-maids..... I have but two reasons for thinking otherwise.

First, had the matter been taken into consideration, before the event happened, my father certainly would have nailed up the sash-window for good and all;——which, considering with what difficulty he composed books,—he might have done with ten times less trouble, than he could have wrote the chapter; this argument, I foresee, holds good against his writing the chapter, even after the event; but 'tis obviated under the second reason, which I have the honor to offer to the world in support of my opinion, that my fa-

ther did not write the chapter upon sash-windows and chamber-pots, at the time supposed,—and it is this.

—That in order to render the Tristra-pædia complete,—I wrote the chapter myself.

## CHAP. XXVII.

MY father put on his spectacles—looked—took them off—put them into the case—all in less than in a statutable minute; and without opening his lips, turned about, and walked precipitately down stairs; my mother imagined he had stepped down for lint and basilicon; but seeing him return with a couple of folios under his arm, and Obadiah following him with a large reading desk, she took it for granted 'twas an herbal, and so drew him a chair to the bed side, that he might consult upon the case at his ease.

—If it be but right done,—said my father, turning to the section—de sede vel subjecto circumsionis,—for he had brought up Spencer de Legibus Hebræorum Ritualibus—and Maimonides, in order to confront and examine us altogether.—

——If it be but right done, quoth he—Only tell us cried my mother, interrupting him what herbs——For that, replied my father, you must send for dr. Slop.

My mother went down, and my father went on, *reading the section* as follows:

* * * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * * * * * *

——Very well,—said my father,

* * * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * * * * * *

———nay, if it has that convenience——and so without stopping a moment to settle it first in his mind, whether the Jews had it from the Egyptians, or the Egyptians from the Jews, he rose up, and rubbing his forehead two or three times across with the palm of his hand, in the manner we rub out the footsteps of care when evil has trod lighter upon us than we foreboded,—he shut the book and walked down stairs.....Nay, said he, mentioning the name of a different great nation upon every step as he set his foot upon it—if the EGYPTIANS,—the SYRIANS,—the PHOENICIANS,—the ARABIANS,—the CAPPADOCIANS,—if the COLCHI, and TROGLODYTES did it—if SOLON and PYTHAGORAS submitted, what is TRISTRAM?——Who am I, that I should fret or fume one moment about the matter?

## CHAP. XXVIII.

DEAR Yorick, said my father, smiling, (for Yorick had broke his rank with my uncle Toby, in coming thro' the narrow entry, and so had stept first into the parlor)—this Tristram of ours, I find, comes very hardly by all his religious rites.——Never was the son of a Jew, Christian, Turk, or Infidel, initiated into them, in so oblique and slovenly a manner.——But he is no worse, I trust, said Yorick———There has been certainly, continued my father, the deuce and all to do in some part or other of the Ecliptic, when this off-

spring of mine was formed.—That, you are a better judge of than I, replied Yorick. Astrologers, quoth my father, know better than us both:—The trine and sextile aspects have jumped awry,—or the opposite of their ascendants have not hit it, as they should,——or the lords of the genitures (as they call them) have been at bo-peep,—or something has been wrong above or below with us.

'Tis possible, answered Yorick.——But is the child, cried my uncle Toby, the worse?——The Troglodytes say not, replied my father.——And your theologists, Yorick, tell us—Theologically? said Yorick,——or speaking after the manner of * apothecaries?—† statesmen?—or ‡ washer-women?

——I'm not sure, replied my father;—but they tell us, brother Toby, he's the better for it.——Provided, said Yorick, you travel him into Egypt.—Of that, answered my father, he will have the advantage, when he sees the pyramids.——

Now, every word of this, quoth my uncle Toby, is Arabic to me.—I wish, said Yorick, 'twas so—to half the world.

——§ Ilus, continued my father, circumcised his whole army one morning.——Not without a

* *Chalepes nosou, kai dusiatou apallage en anthraka kalousin.* PHILO.

† *Ta gemnomena ton ethnon polugonotata, kai poluanthropotata einai.*

‡ *Kathariotetos eineken.* BOCHART.

§ *O Ilos ta aidoia peritemnotai. Tauto poiesai kai tous am' auto summachous katanagkasas.* SANCHONIATHO.

court-martial? cried my uncle Toby.——Tho' the learned, continued he, (taking no notice of my uncle Toby's remark, but turning to Yorick),—are greatly divided still who Ilus was;——some say Saturn;—some the supreme Being;—others, no more than a brigadier-general under Pharaoh Neco.—Let him be who he will, said my uncle Toby, I know not by what article of war he could justify it.

The controvertists, answered my father, assign two and twenty different reasons for it.—Others indeed, who have drawn their pens on the opposite side of the question, have shown the world the futility of the greatest part of them. But then again, our best polemic divines.....I wish there was not a polemic divine, said Yorick, in the kingdom;——one ounce of practical divinity is worth a painted ship load of all their reverences have imported these fifty years.—Pray, Mr. Yorick, quoth my uncle Toby, do tell me what a polemic divine is.——The best description, captain Shandy, I have ever read, is of a couple of 'em, replied Yorick, in the account of the battle fought single hands betwixt Gymnast and captain Tripet: Which I have in my pocket.——I beg I may hear it, quoth my uncle Toby, earnestly.—You shall, said Yorick.————And as the Corporal is waiting for me at the door,—and I know the description of a battle will do the poor fellow more good than his supper,——I beg, brother, you'll give him leave to come in.——With all my soul, said my father.——Trim came in, erect and happy as an emperor: And having shut the door, Yorick took a book from his right hand coat-pocket, and read, or pretended to read, as follows.



816583

## CHAP. XXIX.

——"WHICH words being heard by all the "soldiers which were there, divers of "them being inwardly terrified, did shrink back, "and make room for the assailant: All this did "Gymnast very well remark and consider; and "therefore, making as if he would have alighted "from off his horse, as he was poising himself "on the mounting side, he most nimbly (with "his short sword by his thigh) shifting his feet "in the stirrup, and performing the stirrup-"leather feat, whereby, after the inclining of his "body downwards, he fourthwith launched him-"self aloft into the air, and placed both his feet "together upon the saddle, standing upright, "with his back turned towards his horse's head, "—Now, (said he) my case goes forward. Then "suddenly, in the same posture wherein he was, "he fetched a gambol upon one foot, and turn-"ing to the left hand, failed not to carry his bo-"dy perfectly round, just into his former posi-"tion, without missing one jot.——Ha! said "Tripet, I will not do that at this time,——and "not without cause. Well, said Gymnast, I have "failed,—I will undo this leap; then with a mar-"vellous strength and agility, turning towards the "right hand, he fetched another frisking gambol "as before; which done, he set his right-hand "thumb upon the bow of the saddle, raised him-"self up, and sprung into the air, poising and up-"holding his whole weight upon the muscle and "nerve of the said thumb, and so turned and "whirled himself about three times: At the fourth, "reversing his body, and overturning it upside "*down, and* foreside back, without touching any

" thing, he brought himself betwixt the horse's " two ears, and then giving himself a jerking " swing, he seated himself upon the crupper.

[This can't be fighting, said my uncle Toby..... The Corporal shook his head at it.....Have patience, said Yorick.]

" Then (Tripet) pass'd his right leg over his " saddle, and placed himself en croup.——— " But, said he, 'twere better for me to get into " the saddle; then putting the thumbs of both " hands upon the crupper before him, and there- " upon leaning himself, as upon the only suppor- " ters of his body, he incontinently turned heels " over head in the air, and straight found himself " betwixt the bow and the saddle, in a tolerable " seat; then springing into the air with a sum- " merset, he turned him about like a wind-mill, " and made about an hundred frisks, turns, and " demipommades."....Good God! cried Trim, losing all patience.....one home thrust of a bayonet is worth it all.....I think so too, replied Yorick.

I am of a contrary opinion, quoth my father.

## CHAP. XXX.

.....NO,.....I think I have advanced nothing, replied my father, making answer to a question which Yorick had taken the liberty to put to him.....I have advanced nothing in the Tristra-pædia, but what is as clear as any one proposition in Euclid.....Reach me, Trim, that

book from off the scrutoire :.....It has oft-times been in my mind, continued my father, to have read it over, both to you, Yorick, and to my brother Toby ; and I think it a little unfriendly in myself, in not having done it long ago.....shall we have a short chapter or two now,.....and a chapter or two hereafter, as occasions serve, and so on, till we get thro' the whole ?.....My uncle Toby and Yorick made the obeisance which was proper ; and the Corporal, tho' he was not included in the compliment, laid his hand upon his breast, and made his bow at the same time..... The company smiled. Trim, quoth my father, has paid the full price for staying out the entertainment.....He did not seem to relish the play, replied Yorick.....'Twas a Tom-foolbattle, an' please your reverence, of captain Tripet's and that other officer, making so many summersets as they advanced ;.....the French come on capering now and then in that way,.....but not quite so much.

My uncle Toby never felt the consciousness of his existence with more complacency, than what the Corporal's, and his own reflections, made him do at that moment ;.....he lighted his pipe,....Yorick drew his chair closer to the table,.....Trim snuff'd the candle,.....my father stirr'd up the fire.....took up the book.....cough'd twice, and began.

## CHAP. XXXI.

THE first thirty pages, said my father, turning over the leaves....are a little dry ; and as they are not closely connected with the subject, .....*for* the present we'll pass them by ; 'Tis a pre-

fatory introduction, continued my father, or an introductory preface (for I am not determined which name to give it) upon political or civil government; the foundation of which being laid in the first conjunction betwixt male and female, for procreation of the species ——I was insensibly led into it.——'Twas natural, said Yorick.

The original of society, continued my father, I'm satisfied, is what Politian tells us, i. e. merely conjugal, and nothing more than the getting together of one man and one woman;——to which, (according to Hesiod) the philosopher adds a servant:——But supposing in the first beginning, there were no men servants born——he lays the foundation of it, in a man,—a woman,—and a bull.——I believe 'tis an ox, quoth Yorick, quoting the passage (*eikon men protista gunaika te boun t' arotera*)——A bull must have given more trouble than his head was worth.——But there is a better reason still, said my father, (dipping his pen into his ink); for the ox being the most patient of animals, and the most useful withal in tilling the ground for their nourishment——was the properest instrument, and emblem too, for the new joined couple, that the creation could heave associated with them. And there is a stronger reason, added my uncle Toby, than them all for the ox——My father had not power to take his pen out of his ink-horn, till he had heard my uncle Toby's reason—For, when the ground was tilled, said my uncle Toby, and made worth inclosing, then they began to secure it by walls and ditches, which was the origin of fortification.——True, true, dear Toby, cried my father, striking out the bull, and putting the ox in his place.

My father gave Trim a nod to snuff the candle, and resumed his discourse.

——I enter upon this speculation, said my father, carelessly, and half shutting the book, as he went on,—merely to show the foundation of the natural relation between a father and his child; the right and jurisdiction over whom he acquires these several ways:—

First, by marriage.

Second, by adoption.

Third, by legitimation.

And, fourth, by procreation; all which I consider in their order.

I lay a slight stress upon one of them, replied Yorick—the act, especially where it ends there, in my opinion, lays as little obligation upon the child as it conveys power to the father.——You are wrong,——said my father argutely, and for this plain reason * * *

## CHAP. XXXII.

TRIM can repeat every word of it by heart, quoth my uncle Toby——Pugh! said my father, not caring to be interrupted with Trim's saying his catechism.—He can, upon my honor, replied my uncle Toby——ask him, Mr. Yorick, any question you please.—

—The fifth commandment, Trim———said Yorick, speaking mildly and with a gentle nod, as to a modest catechumen. The Corporal stood silent.—You don't ask him right, said my uncle Toby, raising his voice and giving it rapidly like the word of command;——The fifth—cried my uncle Toby,——I must begin with the first, an' please your honor, said the Corporal.—

—Yorick could not forbear smiling.——Your reverence does not consider, said the Corporal, shouldering his stick like a musket, and marching into the middle of the room, to illustrate his position,—that 'tis exactly the same thing as doing one's exercise in the field.

"Join your right hand to your firelock," cried the Corporal, giving the word of command, and performing the motion.

"Poise your firelock," cried the Corporal, doing the duty still of both adjutant and private man——

"Rest your firelock;"—one motion, an' please your reverence, you see, leads into another.——If his *honor will begin* but with the first——

The first——cried my uncle Toby, setting his hand upon his side. * * * * * * * * * * * *

The second—cried my uncle Toby, waving his tobacco pipe as he would have done his sword at the head of a regiment.—The Corporal went thro' his manual with exactness ; and having honored his father and mother made a low bow, and fell back to the side of the room.

Every thing in this world, said my father, is big with jest,—and has wit in it, and instruction too—if we can but find it out.

—Here is the scaffold-work of INSTRUCTION, its true point of folly without the building behind it.——

Here is the glass for pedagogues, preceptors, tutors, governors, gerund grinders, and bear-leaders, to view themselves in, in their true dimensions.—

Oh! there is a husk and shell, Yorick, which grows up with learning, which their unskilfulness knows not how to fling away!

SCIENCES MAY BE LEARNED BY ROTE, BUT WISDOM NOT.

Yorick thought my father inspired.—I will enter into obligations this moment, said my father, to lay out all my aunt Dinah's legacy in charitable uses, (of which, by the bye, my father had no high opinion), if the Corporal has any one determinate idea annexed to any one word he has repeated.—Prithee, Trim, quoth my father, turning round to him,—What dos't thou mean, by "ho-"*noring thy* father and mother?"

Allowing them, an' please your honor, three half-pence a day out of my pay, when they grow old.——And didst thou do that, Trim? said Yorick.——He did, indeed, replied my uncle Toby—Then, Trim, said Yorick, springing out of his chair, and taking the Corporal by the hand, thou art the best commentator upon that part of the Decalogue; and I honor thee more for it, Corporal Trim, than if thou hadst had a hand in the Talmud itself.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

O BLESSED health! cried my father, making an exclamation, as he turned over the leaves to the next chapter,—thou art above all gold and treasure; 'tis thou who enlargest the soul—and openest all its powers to receive instruction, and to relish virtue.—He that has thee, has little more to wish for;—and he that is so wretched as to want thee,——wants every thing with thee——

I have concentrated all that can be said upon this important head, said my father, into very little room, therefore we'll read the chapter quite thro'.

My father read as follows:

"The whole secret of health depending upon "the due contention for mastery betwixt the ra- "dical heat and the radical moisture." You have proved that matter of fact, I suppose, above, said Yorick.—Sufficiently, replied my father.

In saying this, my father shut the book,—not as if he resolved to read no more of it, for he kept his forefinger in the chapter: Not pettishly,—for he shut the book slowly: His thumb resting, when he had done it, upon the upper side of the cover, as his three fingers supported the lower side of it, without the least compressive violence.—

I have demonstrated the truth of that point, quoth my father, nodding to Yorick, most sufficiently in the preceding chapter.

Now, could the man in the moon be told, that a man in the earth had wrote a chapter sufficiently demonstrating, That the secret of all health depended upon the due contention for mastery betwixt the radical heat and radical moisture,—and that he had managed the point so well, that there was not one single word, wet or dry, upon radical heat or radical moisture, throughout the whole chapter,—or a single syllable in it, pro or con, directly or indirectly, upon the contention betwixt these two powers in any part of the animal economy—

"O thou eternal Maker of all beings!"—he would cry, striking his breast with his right hand, (in case he had one)—"Thou whose power and "goodness can enlarge the faculties of thy crea-"tures to this infinite degree of excellence and "perfection,—what have we MOONITES "done?"

## CHAP. XXXIV.

WITH two strokes, the one at Hippocrates, the other at Lord Verulam, did my father achieve it.

The stroke at the prince of physicians, with which he began, was no more than a short insult upon his sorrowful complaint of the Ars longa ——and Vita brevis.——Life short, cried my father and the art of healing tedious! And who are we to thank for both the one and the other, but the ignorance of quacks themselves,—and the stage loads of chymical nostrums, and peripatetic lumber, with which, in all ages, they have first flatter'd the world, and at last deceived it?

—O my lord Verulam! cried my father, turning from Hippocrates, and making his second stroke at him, as the principal of nostrum-mongers, and the fittest to be made an example of to the rest,—What shall I say to thee, my great lord Verulam? What shall I say to thy internal spirit—thy opium,—thy salt-petre,—thy greasy unction—thy daily purges,—thy nightly glisters, —and succedaneums?

—My father was never at a loss what to say to any man, upon any subject; and had the least occasion for the exordium of any man breathing: How he dealt with his lordship's opinion,—you shall see;—but when—I know not:—We must first see what his lordship's opinion was.

## CHAP. XXXV.

"THE two great curses which conspire with "each other to shorten life, says lord Ve-"rulam, are, first——

"The internal spirit, which, like a gentle flame, "wastes the body down to death:——And se-"condly, the external air, that parches the body "up to ashes:——Which two enemies, attacking "us on both sides of our bodies together, at length "destroy our organs, and render them unfit to "carry on the functions of life."

This being the state of the case, the road to longevity was plain; nothing more being required, says his lordship, but to repair the waste committed by the internal spirit, by making the substance of it more thick and dense, by a regular course of opiates on one side, and by refrigerating the heat of it on the other, by three grains and a half of saltpetre every morning before you get up——

Still this frame of ours was left exposed to the inimical assaults of the air without;——but this was fenced off again by a course of greasy unctions, which so fully saturated the pores of the skin, that no spicula could enter;——nor could any one get out.——This put a stop to all perspiration, sensible and insensible; which being the cause of so many scurvy distempers——a course of glisters was requisite to carry off redundant humors,——and render the system complete.

What my father had to say to my lord of Verulam's opiates, his saltpetre and greasy unctions,

and glisters, you shall read,—but not to-day—or to-morrow: Time presses upon me—my reader is impatient—I must get forwards.—You shall read the chapter at your leisure, (if you choose it) as soon as ever the Tristra-pædia is published.——

Sufficeth it at present, to say, my father levelled the hypothesis with the ground, and, in doing that, the learned know, he built up and established his own.———

## CHAP. XXXVI.

THE whole secret of health, said my father, beginning the sentence again, depending evidently upon the due contention betwixt the radical heat and radical moisture within us:—The least imaginable skill had been sufficient to have maintained it, had not the schoolmen confounded the task, merely (as Van Helmont, the famous chymist, has proved) by all along mistaking the radical moisture for the tallow and fat of animal bodies.

Now, the radical moisture is not the tallow or fat of animals, but an oily and balsamous substance; for the fat and tallow, as also the phlegm or watery parts, are cold; whereas the oily and balsamous parts are of a lively heat and spirit; Which accounts for the observation of Aristotle, "Quod omne animal post coitum est triste."

Now it is certain that the radical heat lives in the radical moisture; but whether vice versa, is a doubt: However, when the one decays, the other decays also; and then is produced, either an *unnatural heat* which causes an unnatural dryness,

—or an unnatural moisture, which causes dropsies.—So that if a child, as he grows up, can be but taught to avoid running into fire or water, as bither of them threaten his destruction,—'twill ee all that is needful to be done upon that head.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

THE description of the siege of Jericho itself, could not have engaged the attention of my uncle Toby more powerfully than the last chapter;—his eyes were fixed upon my father throughout it;——he never mentioned radical heat and radical moisture, but my uncle Toby took his pipe out of his mouth, and shook his head; and as soon as the chapter was finished, he beckoned to the Corporal to come close to his chair, to ask him the following question———aside———*
* * * * * * *
* * * * *. It was at the siege of Limerick, an' please your honor, replied the Corporal, making a bow.

The poor fellow and I, quoth my uncle Toby, addressing himself to my father, were scarce able to crawl out of our tents, at the time the siege of Limerick was raised, upon the very account you mention.——Now, what can have got into that precious noddle of thine, my dear brother Toby? cried my father, mentally.—By heaven! continued he, communing still with himself, it would puzzle an Oedipus to bring it in point.——

I believe, an' please your honor, quoth the Corporal, that if it had not been for the quantity of *brandy* we set fire to every night, and the claret *and cinnamon* with which I plied your honor off;

—and the geneva, Trim, added my uncle Toby, which did us more good than all.—I verily believe, continued the Corporal, we had both an' please your honor, left our lives in the trenches, and been buried in them too.——The noblest grave, Corporal! cried my uncle Toby, his eyes sparkling as he spoke, that a soldier could wish to lie down in. But a pitiful death for him! an' please your honor, replied the Corporal.

All this was as much Arabic to my father, as the rites of the Colchi and Troglodytes had been before to my uncle Toby; my father could not determine whether he was to frown or smile.

My uncle Toby, turning to Yorick, resumed the case at Limerick, more intelligibly than he had begun it,—and so settled the point for my father at once.

## CHAP. XXXVIII.

IT was undoubtedly, said my uncle Toby, a great happiness to myself and the Corporal, that we had all along a burning fever attended with a most raging thirst, during the whole five and twenty days the flux was upon us in the camp; otherwise, what my brother calls the radical moisture, must, as I conceive it, inevitably have got the better.....My father drew in his lungs topful of air, and looking up, blew it forth again as slowly as he possibly could.—

——It was heaven's mercy to us, continued my uncle Toby, which put it into the Corporal's head, to maintain that due contention between *the radical heat* and the radical moisture, by rein-

forcing the fevers, as he did all along with hot wines and spices; whereby the Corporal kept up (as it were) a continual firing, so that the radical heat stood its ground from the beginning to the end, and was a fair match for the moisture, terrible as it was.....Upon my honor, added my uncle Toby, you might have heard the contention within our bodies, brother Shandy, twenty toises —If there was no firing, said Yorick.

Well—said my father, with a full aspiration, and pausing a while after the word—was I a judge, and the laws of the country which made me one, permitted it, I would condemn some of the worst malefactors, provided they had had their clergy..... .....Yorick foreseeing the sentence was likely to end with no sort of mercy, laid his hand upon my father's breast, and begged he would respite it for a few minutes, till he asked the Corporal a question—Prithee, Trim, said Yorick, without staying for my father's leave—tell us honestly—what is thy opinion concerning this self same radical heat and radical moisture?

With humble submission to his honor's better judgment, quoth the Corporal, making a bow to my uncle Toby—Speak thy opinion freely, Corporal, said my uncle Toby.—The poor fellow is my servant—not my slave,—added my uncle Toby, turning to my father.

The Corporal put his hat under his left arm, and with his stick hanging upon the wrist of it, by a black thong split into a tassel about the knot, he marched up to the ground where he had performed his catechism; then touching his under jaw with the thumb and fingers of his right hand before he opened his mouth,—he delivered his *motion thus.*

## CHAP. XXXIX.

JUST as the Corporal was hemming to begin —in waddled dr. Slop,—'Tis not two pence matter—the Corporal shall go on in the next chapter, let who will come in.——

Well, my good doctor, cried my father, sportively, for the transitions of his passions were unaccountably sudden,—and what has this whelp of mine to say to the matter?

Had my father been asking after the amputation of the tail of a puppy dog—he could not have done it in a more careless air: The system which dr. Slop had laid down, to treat the accident by, no way allowing of such a mode of inquiry.—— He sat down.

Pray, sir, quoth my uncle Toby, in a manner which could not go unanswered,—in what condition is the boy?—'Twill end in a phimosis, replied dr. Slop.

I am no wiser than I was, quoth my uncle Toby,—returning his pipe into his mouth.——Then let the Corporal go on, said my father, with his medical lecture——The Corporal made a bow to his old friend, dr. Slop, and then delivered his opinions concerning radical heat and radial moisture, in the following words.

## CHAP. XL.

THE city of Limerick, the siege of which was begun under his majesty king William himself, the year after I went into the army—— lies, an' please your honors, in the middle of a devilish wet, swampy country.—'Tis quite surrounded, said my uncle Toby, with the Shannon, and is, by its situation, one of the strongest fortified places in Ireland.

I think this is a new fashion, quoth dr. Slop, of beginning a medical lecture—'Tis all true, answered Trim.—Then I wish the faculty would follow the cut of it, said Yorick. —'Tis all cut thro', an' please your reverence, said the Corporal, with drains and bogs ; and besides, there was such a quantity of rain fell during the siege, the whole country was like a puddle :—'Twas that and nothing else, which brought on the flux, and which had like to have killed both his honor and myself. Now there was no such thing after the first ten days, continued the Corporal, for a soldier to lie dry in his tent, without cutting a ditch round it, to draw off the water ;—nor was that enough for those who could afford it, as his honor could, without setting fire every night to a pewter dish full of brandy, which took off the damp of the air, and made the inside of the tent as warm as a stove.——

And what conclusion dost thou draw, Corporal Trim, cried my father, from all these premises ?

I infer, an' please your worship, replied Trim, that the radical moisture is nothing in the world

but ditch water—and that the radical heat of those who can go to the expense of it, is burnt brandy: —The radical heat and moisture of a private man, an' please your honors, is nothing but ditch-water and a dram of geneva—and give us but enough of it, with a pipe of tobacco, to give us spirits, and drive away the vapors,—we know not what it is to fear death.

I am at a loss, captain Shandy, quoth doctor Slop, to determine in which branch of learning your servant shines most, whether in physiology, or divinity.——Slop had not forgot Trim's comment upon the sermon.——

It is but an hour ago, replied Yorick, since the Corporal was examined in the latter, and passed muster with great honor.——

The radical heat and moisture, quoth dr. Slop, turning to my father, you must know, is the basis and foundation of our being,—as the root of a tree is the source and principal of its vegetation. ——It is inherent in the seeds of all animals, and may be preserved sundry ways, but principally, in my opinion, by consubstantials, impriments, and occludents.——Now this poor fellow, continued dr. Slop, pointing to the Corporal, has had the misfortune to have heard some superficial empiric discourse upon this nice point———That he has,—said my father.——Very likely, said my uncle———I'm sure of it,—quoth Yorick.

## CHAP. XLI.

DOCTOR Slop being called out to look at a cataplasm he had ordered, it gave my father an opportunity of going on with another

chapter in the Tristra-pædia——Come !—chear up, my lads ; I'll show you land——for when we have tugged thro' that chapter, the book shall not be opened again this twelvemonth.——Huzza !——

## CHAP. LXII.

——FIVE years with a bib under his chin ;

Four years in travelling from Christ-cross-row to Malachi ;

A year and a half in learning to write his own name ;

Seven long years and more *tupto*-ing it, at Greek and Latin ;

Four years at his probations and his negations ——the fine statue still lying in the middle of the marble block,——and nothing done, but his tools sharpened to hew it out !——'Tis a piteous delay !——Was not the great Julius Scaliger within an ace of never getting his tools sharpened at all ?——Forty-four years old was he before he could manage his Greek ;——and Peter Damianus, lord bishop of Ostia, as all the world knows, could not so much as read, when he was of man's estate ——————And Baldus himself as eminent as he turned out after, entered upon the law so late in life, that every body imagined he intended to be an advocate in the *other world*.—No wonder, when Eudamidas, the

son of Archidamas, heard Xenocrates at seventy-five disputing about wisdom, that he asked gravely,———If the old man be yet disputing and inquiring concerning wisdom,—what time will he have to make use of it?

Yorick listened to my father with great attention; there was a seasoning of wisdom unaccountably mixed up with his strangest whims, and he had sometimes such illuminations in the darkest of his eclipses, as almost atoned for them:—Be wary, sir, when you imitate him.

I am convinced, Yorick, continued my father, half reading and half discoursing, that there is a north-west passage to the intellectual world; and that the soul of man has shorter ways of going to work, in furnishing itself with knowledge and instruction, than we generally take with it.——— But, alack! all fields have not a river or a spring running beside them;———every child, Yorick! has not a parent to point it out.

——The whole entirely depends, added my father, in a low voice, upon the auxiliary verbs, Mr. Yorick.

Had Yorick trod upon Virgil's snake, he could not have looked more surprised——I am surprised too, cried my father, observing it;——— and I reckon it as one of the greatest calamities which ever befel the republic of letters, That those who have been intrusted with the education of our children and whose business it was to open their minds, and stock them early with ideas, in order to set the imagination loose upon them, have made so little use of the auxiliary verbs in doing it, as they have done.———So that, except Raymond, Lullius, and the elder Pelegrini, the last of which arrived to such a perfection in

the use of 'em, with his topics, that, in a few lessons, he could teach a youg gentleman to discourse with plausibility upon any subject, pro and con, and to say and write all that could be spoken or written concerning it, without blotting a word, to the admiration of all who beheld him———I should be glad, said Yorick, interrupting my father, to be made to comprehend this matter—You shall, said my father.

The highest stretch of improvement a single word is capable of, is a high metaphor,—for which, in my opinion; the idea is generally the worse, and not the better;——but be that as it may,—when the mind has done that with it——there is an end,——the mind and the idea are at rest—until a second idea enters,—and so on.

Now the use of the auxiliaries, is, at once to set the soul a-going by herself upon the materials, as they are brought her; and, by the versability of this great engine, round which they are twisted, to open new tracts of inquiry, and make every idea engender millions.

You excite my curiosity greatly, said Yorick.

For my own part, quoth my uncle Toby, I have given it up.——The Danes, an' please your honor, quoth the Corporal, who were on the left at the siege of Limerick, were all auxiliaries.——And very good ones, said my uncle Toby.——And your honor roul'd with them—captains with captains——very well said the Corporal.—But the auxiliaries, Trim, my brother is talking about, answered my uncle Toby, I conceive to be different things.

——*You do?* said my father, rising up.

## CHAP. XLIII.

MY father took a single turn across the room, then sat down and finished the chapter.—

The verbs auxiliary we are concerned in here, continued my father, are, am ; was ; have ; had ; do ; did ; make ; made ; suffer ; shall ; should ; will ; would ; can ; could ; owe ; ought ; used, or is wont. And these varied with tenses, present, past, future ; and conjugated with the verbs See—or with these questions added to them,—Is it ? Was it ? Will it be ? Would it be ? May it be ? Might it be ? And these again put negatively—Is it not ? Was it not ? Ought it not ?—Or affimatively—It is ; It was ; It ought to be. Or cronologically—Has it been always ? Lately ? How long ago ?—Or hypothetically—If it was ; If it was not ;—What would follow ?—If the French should beat the English ?—If the Sun go out of the Zodiac ?

Now, by the right use and application of these, continued my father, in which a child's memory should be exercised, there is no one idea can enter his brain, how barren soever, but a magazine of conceptions, and conclusions may be drawn forth from it ;.....Didst thou ever see a white bear ? cried my father, turning his head round to Trim, who stood at the back of his chair :..... No, an' please your honor, replied the Corporal. .....But thou couldst discourse about one, Trim, said my father, in case of need ?.....How is it possible, brother, quoth my uncle Toby, if the Corporal never saw one ?.....'Tis the fact I want,

replied my father; and the possibility of it is as follows:

A WHITE BEAR! Very well.....Have I ever seen one? Might I ever have seen one?..... Am I ever to see one? Ought I ever to have seen one? Or, can I ever see one?

Would I had seen a white bear! (for how can I imagine it?)

If I should see a white bear, what should I say? If I should never see a white bear, what then?

If I never have, can, must, or shall see a white bear alive; have I ever seen the skin of one? Did I ever see one painted?.....described? Have I never dreamed of one?

Did my father, mother, uncle, aunt, brothers, or sisters, ever see a white bear? What would they give? How would they behave? How would the white bear have behaved? Is he wild? Tame? Terrible? Rough? Smooth?

.....Is the white bear worth seeing?

.....Is there no sin in it?

.....Is it better than a BLACK ONE?

END OF THE FIFTH BOOK.

THE

# LIFE AND OPINIONS

OF

# TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENT.

## CHAP. I.

—WE'LL not stop two moments, my dear sir,—only, as we have got thro' these five volumes, (do, sir, sit down upon a seat—they are better than nothing) let us just look back upon the country we have passed thro'———

What a wilderness has it been! and what a mercy that we have not both of us been lost, or devoured by wild beasts in it!

Did you think the world itself, sir, had contained such a number of jack asses?.....How they view'd and review'd us as we passed over the rivulet at the bottom of that little valley \.....and

when we climbed over that hill, and were just getting out of sight.....good God! what a braying did they all set up together!

.....Prithee, shepherd, who keeps all these jack asses? * * *

.....Heaven be their comfort.....What? are they never curried?.....Are they never taken in, in winter?.....Bray.....bray.....bray, Bray on,.....the world is deeply your debtor;.....louder still..... that's nothing;.....in good sooth, you are all ill used:—Was I a jack ass, I solemnly declare, I would bray in G-sol-re-ut from morning, even unto night.

## CHAP. II.

WHEN my father had danced his white bear backwards and forwards thro' half a dozen pages, he closed the book for good and all,—and in a kind of triumph redelivered it into Trim's hand, with a nod to lay it upon the scrutoire where he found it.

Tristram, said he, shall be made to conjugate every word in the dictionary, backwards and forwards in the same way:—Every word, Yorick, by this means, you see, is converted into a thesis or an hypothesis;—every thesis and hypothesis have an offspring of propositions;—and each proposition has its own consequences and conclusions;—every one of which leads the mind on again into fresh tracts of inquiries and doubtings.——The *force of this* engine, added my father, is incredible,

in opening a child's head—'Tis enough, brother Shandy, cried my uncle Toby, to burst it into a thousand splinters.

I presume, said Yorick, smiling,—it must be owing to this,—(for, let logicians say what they will, it is not to be accounted for sufficiently from the bare use of the ten predicaments)——that the famous Vincent Quirino, amongst the many other astonishing feats of his childhood, of which the Cardinal Bembo has given the world so exact a story—should be able to paste up, in the public schools at Rome, so early as in the eighth year of his age, no less than four thousand five hundred and sixty different thesis, upon the most abstruse points of the most abstruse theology;—and to defend and maintain them in such sort, as to cramp and dumfound his opponents.—What is that, cried my father, to what is told us of Alphonsus Tostatus, who, almost in his nurse's arms, learned all the sciences and liberal arts, without being taught any one of them? What shall we say of the great Peireskius?——That's the very man, cried my uncle Toby, I once told you of, brother Shandy, who walked a matter of five hundred miles, reckoning from Paris to Scheveling, and from Scheveling back again, merely to see Stevinus's flying chariot.——He was a very great man! added my uncle Toby, (meaning Stevinus)——He was so, brother Toby, said my father, (meaning Peireskius)—and had multiplied his ideas so fast, and increased his knowledge to such a prodigious stock, that, if we may give credit to an anecdote concerning him, which we cannot withhold here, without shaking the authority of all anecdotes whatever——at seven years of age, his father committed entirely to his care the education of his younger brother, a boy of five years old,—with the sole management of

all his concerns.——Was the father as wise as the son? quoth my uncle Toby: I should think not, said Yorick;——But what are these, continued my father—(breaking out in a kind of enthusiasm)—what are these, to those prodigies of childhood in Grotius Scioppius, Hiensius, Politian, Pascal, Joseph Scalinger, Ferdinand de Cordoue, and others,——some of which left off their substantial forms at nine years old, or sooner, and went on reasoning without them?—Others went thro' the classics at seven,—wrote tragedies at eight.—Ferdinand de Cordoue was so wise at nine, 'twas tho't the devil was in him;—and at Venice, gave such proofs of his knowledge and goodness, that the monks imagined he was Antichrist, or nothing.—Others were masters of fourteen languages at ten, finished the course of their rhetoric, poetry, logic, and ethics, at eleven,—put forth their commentaries upon Servius and Martianus Capella at twelve—and at thirteen received their degrees in philosophy, laws, and divinity;——But you forget the great Lipsius, quoth Yorick, who composed a work* the day he was born——They should have wiped it up, said my uncle Toby, and said no more about it.

* *Nous aurions quelque interet, says Baillet, de montrer qu'il n'a rien de ridicule s'il etoit veritable, au moins dans le sens enigmatique que Nicius Erythræus a tache de lui donner. Cet auteur dit, que pour comprendre comme Lispe a pu composer un ouvrage le premier jour de sa vie, il faut s'imaginer, que ce premier jour n'est pas celui de sa naissance charnelle, mais celui au quel il a commence d'user de la raison; il veut que c'ait [illegible] a l'age de neuf ans; et il nous veut persuader que ce fut en cet age, que Lipse fit un poeme.——Le tour est ingenieux, &c. &c.*

## CHAP. III.

WHEN the cataplasm was ready, a scruple of decorum had unseasonably rose up in Susannah's conscience about holding the candle, whilst Slop tied it on; Slop had not treated Susannah's distemper with anodynes,——and so a quarrel had ensued betwixt them.

.....Oh! oh! said Slop, casting a glance of undue freedom in Susannah's face as she declined the office;.....then, I think, I know you, madam.————You know me, sir! cried Susannah, fastidiously, and with a toss of her head, levelled evidently, not at his profession, but at the doctor himself,—you know me! cried Susannah again.——Dr. Slop clapped his finger and his thumb instantly upon his nostrils——Susannah's spleen was ready to burst at it:—'Tis false, said Susannah. Come, come, Mrs. Modesty, said Slop, not a little elated with the success of his last thrust, if you won't hold the candle and look—you may hold it and shut your eyes:——That's one of your popish shifts, cried Susannah:——'Tis better, said Slop, with a nod, than no shift at all, young woman:——I defy you, sir, cried Susannah, pulling her shift-sleeve below her elbow.

It was almost impossible for two persons to assist each other, in a surgical case, with a more splenetic cordiality.

Slop snatched up the cataplasm,——Susannah snatched up the candle;—a little this way, said Slop:—Susannah looking one way, and rowing another, *instantly* set fire to Slop's wig, which be-

ing somewhat bushy and unctuous withal, was burnt out before it was well kindled.——You impudent whore; cried Slop,——(for what is passion but a wild beast)——you impudent whore, cried Slop, getting upright, with the cataplasm in his hand;—I never was the destruction of any body's nose, said Susannah,—which is more than you can say.——Is it? cried Slop, throwing the cataplasm in her face;——Yes it is, cried Susannah, returning the compliment with what was left in the pan.

## CHAP. IV.

DOCTOR Slop and Susannah filed crossbills against each other in the parlor; which done, as the cataplasm had failed, they retired into the kitchen to prepare a fomentation for me;—and whilst that was doing, my father determined the point, as you will read.—

## CHAP. V.

YOU see 'tis high time, said my father, addressing himself equally to my uncle Toby and Yorick, to take this young creature out of these womens hands, and put him into those of a private governor. Marcus Antoninus provided fourteen governors all at once to superintend his son Commodus's education,—and in six weeks he cashiered five of them. I know very well, continued my father, that Commodus's mother was in love with a gladiator at the time of her conception; which accounts for a great many of *Commodus*'s cruelties when he became emperor;

—but still I am of opinion, that those five whom Autoninus dismissed, did Commodus's temper, in that short time, more hurt than the other nine were able to rectify all their lives long.

Now, as I consider the person who is to be about my son, as the mirror in which he is to view himself from morning to night, and by which he is to adjust his looks, his carriage, and perhaps, the inmost sentiments of his heart;——I would have one, Yorick, if possible, polished at all points, fit for my child to look into. This is very good sense, quoth my uncle Toby, to himself.—

——There is, continued my father, a certain mein and motion of the body and all its parts, both in acting and speaking, which argues a man well within:—And I am not at all surpised, that Gregory of Nazianzum, upon observing the hasty and untoward gestures of Julian, should foretel he would one day become an apostate;—or that St. Ambrose should turn his amanuensis out of doors, because of an indecent motion of his head, which went backwards and forwards like a flail;——or that Democritus should conceive Protagoras to be a scholar, from seeing him bind up a faggot, and thrusting, as he did it, the small twigs inwards.—There are a thousand unnoticed openings, continued my father, which let a penetrating eye at once into a man's soul: And I maintain it, added he, that a man of sense does not lay down his hat in coming into a room,—or take it up in going out of it, but something escapes which discovers him.

It is for these reasons, continued my father, that the governor I make choice of, shall neither * lisp, or squint, or wink, or talk loud, or look fierce, or foolish;—or bite his lips, or grind his

* *Vide Pelegrina.*

teeth, or speak thro' his nose, or pick it, or blow it with his fingers.———

He shall neither walk fast,—or slow, or fold his arms—for that is laziness;—or hang them down—for that is folly; or hide them in his pocket—for that is nonsense.

He shall neither strike, or pinch, or tickle,——or bite, or cut his nails, or hawk, or spit, or snift, or drum with his feet or fingers in company;—nor (according to Erasmus) shall he speak to any one in making water,—nor shall he point to carrion or excrement.—Now, this is all nonsense again, quoth my uncle Toby to himself.

I will have him, continued my father, cheerful, facete, jovial; at the same time, prudent, attentive to business, vigilant, acute, argute, inventive, quick in resolving doubts and speculative questions:—He shall be wise, and judicious, and learned:—And why not humble, and moderate, and gentle-tempered, and good? said Yorick:—And why not, cried my uncle Toby, free, and generous, and bountiful, and brave?—He shall, my dear Toby, replied my father, getting up and shaking him by the hand.——Then, brother Shandy, answered my uncle Toby, raising himself off the chair, and laying down his pipe to take hold of my father's other hand,—I humbly beg I may recommend poor Le Fevre's son to you;—a tear of joy of the first water sparkled in my uncle Toby's eye,——and another, the fellow to it in the Corporal's, as the proposition was made;—you will see why, when you read Le Fevre's story;—fool that I was! nor can I recollect, (nor perhaps you) without turning back to the place, what it was that hindered me from letting the Corporal *tell it in* his own words;—but the occasion is lost, —*I must tell it* now in my own.

## CHAP. VI.

### The story of LE FEVRE.

IT was some time in the summer of that year in which Dendermond was taken by the allies,—which was about seven years before my father came into the country,—and about as many after the time that my uncle Toby and Trim had privately decamped from my father's house in town, in order to lay some of the finest sieges to some of the finest fortified cities in Europe—when my uncle Toby was one evening getting his supper, with Trim sitting behind him at a small sideboard,—I say setting ;—for in consideration of the Corporal's lame knee (which sometimes gave him exquisite pain)—when my uncle Toby dined or supped alone, he would never suffer the Corporal to stand ; and the poor fellow's veneration for his master was such, that, with a proper artillery, my uncle Toby could have taken Dendermond itself, with less trouble than he was able to gain this point over him ; for, many a time, when my uncle Toby supposed the Corporal's leg was at rest, he would look back, and detect him standing behind him with the most dutiful respect :—This bred more little squabbles betwixt them, than all other causes for five and twenty years together.—But this is neither here nor there—why do I mention it ?—Ask my pen,—it governs me,—I govern not it.

He was one evening sitting thus at his supper, when the landlord of a little inn in the village, came into the parlor with an empty phial in his hand, to beg a glass or two of sack ; 'Tis for a

poor gentleman—I think, of the army, said the landlord, who has been taken ill at my house four days ago, and has never held up his head since, or had a desire to taste any thing, till just now, that he has a fancy for a glass of sack, and a thin toast—I think, says he taking his hand from his forehead, it would comfort me,—

—If I could neither beg, borrow, or buy such a thing,—added the landlord,—I would almost steal it for the poor gentleman, he is so ill;—I hope in God he will still mend, continued he;—we are all of us concerned for him.

Thou art a good-natured soul, I will answer for thee, cried my uncle Toby; and thou shalt drink the poor gentleman's health in a glass of sack thyself,—and take a couple of bottles, with my service, and tell him, he is heartily welcome to them, and to a dozen more, if they will do him good.

Though I am persuaded said my uncle Toby, as the landlord shut the door, he is a very compassionate fellow—Trim,—yet I cannot help entertaining a high opinion of his guest too; there must be something more than common in him, that, in so short a time, should win so much upon the affections of his host:—And of his whole family, added the Corporal, for they are all concerned for him.—Step after him, said my uncle Toby,—do, Trim,——and ask if he knows his name.

—I have quite forgot it, truly, said the landlord, coming back into the parlor, with the Corporal,—but I can ask his son again:—Has he a son with him then? said my uncle Toby.—A *boy, replied* the landlord, of about eleven or twelve

years of age ;—but the poor creature has tasted almost as little as his father ; he does nothing but mourn and lament for him night and day :—He has not stirred from the bed-side these two days.

My uncle Toby laid down his knife and fork, and thrust his plate from before him, as the landlord gave him the account ; and Trim, without being ordered, took it away, without saying one word, and in a few minutes after brought him his pipe and tobacco.

—Stay in the room a little, said my uncle Toby.

Trim !—said my uncle Toby, after he lighted his pipe, and smoked about a dozen whiffs—— Trim came in front of his master and made his bow ;—my uncle Toby smoked on, and said no more.—Corporal ! said my uncle Toby—the Corporal made his bow.—My uncle Toby proceeded no farther, but finished his pipe.

Trim ! said my uncle Toby, I have a project in my head, as it is a bad night, of wrapping myself up warm in my roquelaure, and paying a visit to this poor gentleman. Your honor's roquelaure, replied the Corporal, has not once been had on, since the night before your honor received your wound, when we mounted guard in the trenches before the gate of St. Nicholas ; and besides, it is so cold and rainy a night, that what with the roquelaure, and what with the weather, 'twill be enough to give your honor your death, and bring on your honor's torment in your groin. I fear so, replied my uncle Toby ; but I am not at rest in my mind, Trim, since the account the landlord has given me,....I wish I had not known so much of this affair,—added my uncle Toby,—or that I had known more of it :—How shall we *manage it ?*—Leave it, an' please your honor, to

me, quoth the Corporal; I'll take my hat and stick and go to the house and reconnoitre, and act accordingly; and I will bring your honor a full account in an hour.....Thou shalt go, Trim, said my uncle Toby, and here's a shilling for thee to drink with his servant.—I shall get it all out of him, said the Corporal, shutting the door.

My uncle Toby filled his second pipe; and had it not been, that he now and then wandered from the point, with considering whether it was not full as well to have the curtain of the tenaille a straight line as a crooked one,—he might be said to have thought of nothing else but poor Le Fevre and his boy, the whole time he smoked it.

## CHAP. VII.

### The story of Le Fevre continued.

IT was not till my uncle Toby had knocked the ashes out of his third pipe, that Corporal Trim returned from the inn, and gave him the following account.

I despaired at first, said the Corporal, of being able to bring back your honor any kind of intelligence concerning the poor sick lieutenant.—Is he in the army then? said my uncle Toby.—He is, said the Corporal—And in what regiment? said my uncle Toby—I'll tell your honor, replied the Corporal, every thing straight forwards, as I learnt it.—Then, Trim, I'll fill another pipe, said my uncle Toby, and not interrupt thee, till thou hast done; so sit down at thy ease, Trim, in the window-seat, and begin thy story again.

The Corporal made his old bow, which generally spoke, as plain as bow could speak it—Your honor is good :—And having done that, he sat down as he was ordered,—and began the story to my uncle Toby over again in pretty near the same words.

I despaired at first, said the Corporal, of being able to bring back any intelligence to your honor, about the lieutenant and his son : For when I asked where his servant was, from whom I made myself sure of knowing every thing which was proper to be asked—That's a right distinction, Trim, said my uncle Toby—I was answered, an' please your honor, that he had no servant with him ;—that he had come to the inn with hired horses, which, upon finding himself unable to proceed, (to join, I suppose, the regiment) he had dismissed the morning after he came. If I get better, my dear, said he, as he gave his purse to his son to pay the man,—we can hire horses from hence. But alas! the poor gentleman will never get from hence, said the landlady to me,—for I heard the death-watch all night long :—And when he dies, the youth, his son, will certainly die with him ; for he is broken-hearted already.

I was hearing this account, continued the Corporal, when the youth came into the kitchen, to order the thin toast the landlord spoke of ;—but I will do it for my father myself, said the youth. —Pray let me save you the trouble, young gentleman, said I, taking up a fork for the purpose, and offering him my chair to sit down upon by the fire, whilst I did it.—I believe, sir, said he, very modestly, I can please him best myself.—I am sure, said I, his honor will not like the toast the worse for being toasted by an old soldier— The youth took hold of my hand and instantly

burst into tears.—Poor youth! said my uncle Toby;—he has been bred up from an infant in the army, and the name of a soldier, Trim, sounded in his ears like the name of a friend;—I wish I had him here.

—I never in the longest march, said the Corporal, had so great a mind to my dinner, as I had to cry with him for company.—What could be the matter with me, an' please your honor? Nothing in the world, Trim, said my uncle Toby, blowing his nose,—but that thou art a good natured fellow.

When I gave him the toast, continued the Corporal, I thought it was proper to tell him, I was captain Shandy's servant, and that your honor (tho' a stranger) was extremely concerned for his father;—and that if there was any thing in your house or cellar——— (And thou might'st have added my purse too, said my uncle Toby)—he was heartily welcome to it:—He made a very low bow, (which was meant to your honor) but no answer,—for his heart was full—so he went up stairs with the toast:—I warrant you, my dear, said I, as I opened the kitchen-door, your father will be well again.—Mr. Yorick's curate was smoking a pipe by the kitchen-fire,—but said not a word good or bad, to comfort the youth.—I thought it wrong, added the Corporal—I think so too, added my uncle Toby.

When the lieutenant had taken his glass of sack and toast, he felt himself a little revived, and sent down into the kitchen, to let me know, that in about ten minutes he should be glad if I would step up stairs.—I believe said the landlord, he is going to say his prayers,——for there

was a book laid upon the chair by his bed-side, and as I shut the door, I saw his son take up a cushin.——

I thought, said the curate, that you gentlemen of the army, Mr. Trim, never said your prayers at all.—I heard the poor gentleman say his prayers last night, said the landlady, very devoutly, and with my own ears, or I could not have believed it.—Are you sure of it? replied the curate.—A soldier, an' please your reverence, said I, prays as often (of his own accord) as a parson; and when he is fighting for his king, and his own life, and for his honor too, he has the most reason to pray to God, of any one in the whole world.—'Twas well said of thee, Trim, said my uncle Toby.—But when a soldier, said I, an' please your reverence, has been standing for twelve hours together, in the trenches, up to his knees in cold water,—or engaged, said I, for months together, in long and dangerous marches;—harrassed, perhaps, in his rear to-day;—harrassing others to-morrow;——detached here;——countermanded there;——resting this night out upon his arms;——beat up in his shirt the next;——benumbed in his joints;——perhaps without straw in his tent to kneel on—must say his prayers how and when he can.——I believe, said I,—for I was piqued, quoth the Corporal, for the reputation of the army——I believe, an' please your reverence, said I, that when a soldier gets time to pray,—he prays as heartily as a parson,—tho' not with all his fuss and hypocrisy—Thou shouldst not have said that, Trim, said my uncle Toby;—for God only knows who is a hypocrite, and who is not:——At the great and general review of us all, Corporal, at the day of judgment, (and not till then)——it will be seen who have done their duties in this world,——and who have

not; and we shall be advanced, Trim, accordingly.——I hope we shall, said Trim.—It is in the scripture, said my uncle Toby; and I will show it thee to-morrow:——In the mean time, we may depend upon it, Trim, for our comfort, said my uncle Toby, that God Almighty is so good and just a governor of the world, that, if we have but done our duties in it,——it will never be inquired into, whether we have done them in a red coat or a black one;——I hope not, said the Corporal——But go on, Trim, said my uncle Toby, with thy story.

When I went up, continued the Corporal, into the lieutenant's room, which I did not do, till the expiration of the ten minutes,——he was lying in his bed, with his head raised upon his hand, with his elbow upon the pillow, and a clean white cambrick handkerchief beside it:—The youth was just stooping down to take up the cushion, upon which, I supposed, he had been kneeling;—the book was laid upon the bed,——and as he rose, in taking up the cushion with one hand, he reached out his other to take it away at the same time——Let it remain there, my dear, said the lieutenant.

He did not offer to speak to me, till I had walked up close to the bedside:————If you are captain Shandy's servant, said he, you must present my thanks to your master, with my little boy's thanks along with them, for his courtesy to me.—If he was of Leven's—said the lieutenant—I told him your honor was—Then, said he, I served three campaigns with him in Flanders, and remember him;—but 'tis most likely, as I had not the honor of any acquaintance with him, that he knows nothing of me—You will tell him, however, that the person his good nature has laid up-

der obligations to him, is one Le Fevre, a lieutenant in Angues's:—But he knows me not—said he, a second time, musing:—Possibly he may my story, added he—Pray tell the captain, I was the ensign at Breda, whose wife was most unfortunately killed with a musket-shot, as she lay in my arms in my tent—I remember the story, an' please your honor, said I, very well.—Do you so? —said he, wiping his eyes with his handkerchief, —then well may I.—In saying this, he drew a little ring out of his bosom, which seemed tied with a black riband about his neck, and kiss'd it twice. —Here, Billy, said he;—the boy flew across the room to the bed-side,——and falling down upon his knee, took the ring in his hand, and kissed it too,——then kissed his father, and sat down upon the bed and wept.

I wish, said my uncle Toby, with a deep sigh, ——I wish, Trim, I was a sleep.

Your honor, replied the Corporal, is too much concerned;—shall I pour your honor out a glass of sack to your pipe?——Do, Trim, said my uncle Toby.

I remember, said my uncle Toby,—sighing again, the story of the ensign and his wife, with a circumstance his modesty omitted;——and particularly well that he, as well as she, upon some account or other, (I forget what) was universally pitied by the whole regiment;——but finish the story thou art upon:——'Tis finished already, said the Corporal,——for I could stay no longer, ——so wished his honor a goodnight: Young Le Fevre rose from off the bed, and saw me to the bottom of the stairs; and as we went down together, told me, they had come from Ireland, and were on their *route* to join the regiment in Flanders

———But, alas! said the Corporal,—the lieutenant's last day's march is over.——Then what is to become of his poor boy! cried my uncle Toby.

## CHAP. VIII.

The story of LE FEVRE continued.

IT was to my uncle Toby's eternal honor,——tho' I tell it only for the sake of those who, when coop'd in betwixt a natural and a positive law, know not, for their souls, which way in the world to turn themselves———That notwithstanding my uncle Toby was warmly engaged at that time in carrying on the siege of Dendermond, parallel with the allies, who pressed theirs on so vigorously, that they scarce allowed him time to get his dinner,—that nevertheless he gave up Dendermond, tho' he had already made a lodgement upon the counterscarp,——and bent his whole thoughts towards the private distresses at the inn; and, except that he ordered the garden gate to be bolted up, by which he might be said to have turned the siege of Dendermond into a blockade—he left Dendermond to itself—to be relieved or not by the French king, as the French king thought good; and only considered how he himself should relieve the poor lieutenant and his son.———

———That kind BEING, who is a friend to the friendless, shall recompense thee for this.

Thou hast left this matter short, said my uncle Toby to the Corporal, as he was putting him to *bed, and I* will tell thee in what, Trim—In the

first place, when thou madest an offer of my services to Le Fevre,—as sickness and travelling are both expensive, and thou knewest he was but a poor lieutenant, with a son to subsist, as well as himself, out of his pay,——that thou didst not make an offer to him of my purse; because, had he stood in need, thou knowest, Trim, he had been as welcome to it as myself.——Your honor knows, said the Corporal, I had no orders:—True, quoth my uncle Toby—thou didst very right, Trim, as a soldier,—but certainly very wrong as a man.

In the second place, for which, indeed, thou hast the same excuse, continued my uncle Toby, —when thou offeredst him whatever was in my house,—thou should'st have offered him my house too:——A sick brother officer should have the best quarters, Trim; and if we had him with us,—we could tend and look to him:——Thou art an excellent nurse thyself, Trim, and, what with thy care of him, and the old woman's, and his boy's, and mine together, we might recruit him again at once, and set him upon his legs.——

———In a fortnight or three weeks added my uncle Toby, smiling—he might march——He will never march, an' please your honor, in this world, said the Corporal:———He will march; said my uncle Toby, rising up from the side of the bed, with one shoe off.——An' please your honor, said the Corporal, he will never march, but to his grave:———He shall march, cried my uncle Toby, marching the foot which had a shoe on, tho' without advancing an inch,——he shall march to his regiment.——He cannot stand it, said the Corporal—He shall be supported, said my uncle Toby—He'll drop at last, said the Corporal, *and what will* become of his boy? He shall

not drop, said my uncle Toby, firmly.——A-well-o'day, do what we can for him, said Trim, maintaining his point—the poor soul will die.—He shall not die, by G—, cried my uncle Toby.

.....The ACCUSING SPIRIT, which flew up to heaven's chancery with the oath, blush'd as he gave it in; and the RECORDING ANGEL, as he wrote it down, dropp'd a tear upon the word, and blotted it out for ever.

## CHAP. IX.

—MY uncle Toby went to his bureau,—put his purse into his breeches pocket, and having ordered the Corporal to go early in the morning for a physician,—he went to bed and fell asleep.

## CHAP. X.

### The story of LE FEVRE concluded.

THE sun looked bright, the morning after to every eye in the village, but Le Fevre's and his afflicted son's; the hand of death press'd heavy upon his eye-lids,—and hardly could the wheel at the cistern turn round its circle,—when my uncle Toby, who had rose up an hour before his wonted time entered the lieutenant's room, and, without preface, or apology, sat himself down upon the chair by the bed-side, and, independently of all modes and customs, opened the curtain, in the manner an old friend and brother officer *would have done* it, and asked him how he did,—

how he had rested in the night,—what was his complaint,—where was his pain,—and what he could do to help him :—And without giving him time to answer any one of these enquiries, went on and told him of the little plan which he had been concerting with the Corporal the night before for him.—

——You shall go home directly, Le Fevre, said my uncle Toby, to my house,——and we'll send for a doctor to see what's the matter,—and we'll have an apothecary—and the Corporal shall be your nurse ;——and I'll be your servant, Le Fevre.

There was a frankness in my uncle Toby,—not the effect of familiarity,—but the cause of it,—which let you at once into his soul, and showed you the goodness of his nature ; to this, there was something in his looks, and voice, and manner superadded, which eternally beckoned to the unfortunate to come and take shelter under him ; so that, before my uncle Toby had half finished the kind offers he was making to the father, had the son insensibly pressed up close to his knees, and had taken hold of the breast of his coat, and was pulling it towards him.————The blood and spirits of Le Fevre, which were waxing cold and slow within him, and were retreating to their last citadel, the heart,—rallied back ;—the film forsook his eyes for a moment ;—he looked up wishfully in my uncle Toby's face,——then cast a look upon his boy,——and that ligament, fine as it was, was never broken.

Nature instantly ebb'd again ;—the film returned to its place; the pulse fluttered—stopp'd—went on—throbb'd—stopp'd again—moved—stopp'd—shall I go on ? No.

## CHAP. XI.

I AM so impatient to return to my own story, that what remains of young Le Fevre's, that is, from this turn of fortune, to the time my uncle Toby recommended him for my preceptor, shall be told in a very few words, in the next chapter. All that is necessary to be added to this chapter, is as follows :

That my uncle Toby, with young Le Fevre in his hand, attended the poor lieutenant, as chief mourners, to his grave.

That the governor of Dendermond paid his obsequies all military honors ; and that Yorick not to be behind hand——paid him all ecclesiastic——for he buried him in his chancel :—— And it appears likewise, he preached a funeral sermon over him :—I say, it appears ;—for it was Yorick's custom, which I suppose a general one with those of his profession, on the first leaf of every sermon which he composed, to chronicle down the time, the place, and the occasion of its being preached ; to this, he was ever wont to add, some short comment or stricture upon the sermon itself, seldom, indeed, much to its credit. —For instance, this sermon upon the Jewish dispensation—I don't like it at all ;—tho' I own there is a world of WATER-LANDISH knowledge in it,—but 'tis all tritical, and most tritically put together.—This is but a flimsy kind of a composition : What was in my head when I made it ?

—N. B. The excellency of this text is, that it will suit any sermon,—and of this sermon—that *it will* suit any text.

—For this sermon I shall be hanged,—for I have stolen the greatest part of it.—Doctor Paidagunes found me out.

☞ Set a thief to catch a thief.

On the back of half a dozen I find written, So so, and no more—and upon a couple, Moderato; by which, as far as any one may gather from Altieri's Italian dictionary—but mostly from the authority of a piece of green whip-cord, which seemed to have been the unravelling of Yorick's whip-lash, with which he has left us the two sermons marked Moderato, and the half dozen of So so, tied fast together in one bundle by themselves, one may safely suppose he meant pretty near the same thing.

There is but one difficulty in the way of this conjecture, which is this, that the moderato's are five times better than the so so's—show ten times more knowledge of the human heart;—have seventy times more wit and spirit in them;—(and, to rise properly in my climax)—discover a thousand times more genius,—and, to crown all, are infinitely more entertaining, than those tied up with them:——For which reason, whenever Yorick's dramatic sermons are offered to the world, tho' I shall admit but one out of the whole number of the so so's, I shall, nevertheless, adventure to print the two moderato's without any sort of scruple.

What Yorick could mean by the words lentamente,—tenute,—grave,—and sometimes adagio,—as applied to theological compositions, and with which he has characterised some of these sermons, I dare not venture to guess.——I am more puzzled still upon finding a l'octava alta! upon one;——Con strepito upon the back of

another ;——Scicilliana upon a third ;——Alla capella upon a fourth ;——Con l'arco upon this ; ——Senza l'arco upon that ;——All I know is, that they are musical terms, and have a meaning ; ——and, as he was a musical man, I will make no doubt, but that, by some quaint application of such metaphors to the compositions in hand, they impressed very distinct ideas of their several characters upon his fancy,——whatever they may do upon that of others.

Amongst these, there is that particular sermon which has unaccountably led me into this digression———the funeral sermon upon poor Le Fevre, wrote out very fairly, as if from a hasty copy. I take notice of it the more, because it seems to have been his favourite composition—It is upon mortality ; and it is tied length-ways and cross-ways, with a yarn thrum, and then rolled up and twisted round, with a half sheet of dirty blue paper, which seems to have been once the cast cover of a general review, which, to this day smells horribly of horse-drugs. Whether these marks of humiliation were designed,——I something doubt ; because at the end of the sermon, (and not at the beginning of it)——very different from his way of treating the rest, he had wrote

*Bravo !*

———tho' not very offensively——for it is at two inches, at least, and a half's distance from, and below the concluding line of the sermon, at the very extremity of the page, and in that right hand corner of it, which, you know, is generally covered with your thumb ; and to do it justice, it is wrote besides, with a crow's quill, so faintly, in a small Italian hand, as scarce to solicit the *eye* towards the place, whether your thumb is

there or not,——so that, from the manner of it, it stands half excused; and being wrote, moreover, with very pale ink, diluted almost to nothing, ——'tis more like a ritratto of the shadow of vanity, than of vanity herself——of the two; resembling rather a faint thought of transient applause, secretly stirring up in the heart of the composer, than a gross mark of it, coarsely obtruded upon the world.

With all these extenuations, I am aware, that in publishing this, I do no service to Yorick's character as a modest man;——but all men have their failings! and, what lessens this still farther, and almost wipes it away, is this, That the word was struck thro' some time afterwards (as appears from a different tint of the ink) with a line quite across it in this manner, BRAVO—as if he had retracted, or was ashamed of the opinion he had once entertained of it.

These short characters of his sermons, were always written, excepting in this one instance, upon the first leaf of his sermon, which served as a cover to it; and usually upon the inside of it, which was turned towards the text:—But at the end of his discourse, where, perhaps he had five or six pages, and sometimes, perhaps, a whole score to turn himself in,—he took a larger circuit, and, indeed, a much more mettlesome one;—as if he had snatched the occasion of unlacing himself with a few more frolicsome strokes at vice, than the straitness of the pulpit allowed.——These, tho', hussar-like, they skirmish lightly and out of all order, are still auxiliaries on the side of virtue.—Tell me then, Mynheer Vander Blonederdondergewdenstronke, why they should not be printed together?

## CHAP. XII.

WHEN my uncle Toby had turned every thing into money, and settled all accounts betwixt the agent of the regiment and Le Fevre, and betwixt Le Fevre and all mankind,——there remained nothing more in my uncle Toby's hands, than an old regimental coat, and a sword; so that my uncle Toby found little or no opposition from the world in taking administraion. The coat, my uncle Toby gave the Corporal:——Wear it, Trim, said my uncle Toby, as long as it will hold together, for the sake of the poor lieutenant———And this——said my uncle Toby, taking up the sword in his hand, and drawing it out of the scabbard as he spoke——and this, Le Fevre, I'll save for thee ;——'tis all the fortune, continued my uncle Toby, hanging it upon a crook, and pointing to it,———'tis all the fortune, my dear Le Fevre, which God has left thee; but if he has given thee a heart to fight thy way with it in the world,—and thou doest it like a man of honor,—'tis enough for us.

As soon as my uncle Toby had laid a foundation, and taught him to inscribe a regular polygon in a circle, he sent him to a public school, where, excepting Whitsuntide and Christmas, at which times the Corporal was punctually dispatched for him,—he remained to the spring of the year seventeen ; when the stories of the emperor's sending his army into Hungary against the Turks, kindling a spark of fire in his bosom, he left his Greek and Latin without leave, and throwing himself upon his knees before my uncle Toby, begged his father's sword, and my uncle

Toby's leave along with it, to go and try his fortune under Eugene.——Twice did my uncle Toby forget his wound, and cry out, Le Fevre! I will go with thee, and thou shalt fight beside me—And twice he laid his hand upon his groin, and hung down his head in sorrow and disconsolation.

My uncle Toby took down the sword from the crook, where it had hung untouched ever since the lieutenant's death, and delivered it to the Corporal to brighten up;——and having detained Le Fevre a single fortnight to equip him, and contract for his passage to Leghorn,—he put the sword into his hand,—If thou art brave, Le Fevre, said my uncle Toby, this will not fail thee—but Fortune, said he (musing a little)——Fortune may——And if she does—added my uncle Toby, embracing him, come back again to me, Le Fevre, and we will shape thee another course.

The greatest injury could not have oppressed the heart of Le Fevre more than my uncle Toby's paternal kindness;—he parted from my uncle Toby, as the best of sons from the best of father's: Both dropped tears:—And as my uncle Toby gave him his last kiss, he slipped sixty guineas, tied up in an old purse of his father's in which was his mother's ring, into his hand,—and bid God bless him.

## CHAP. XIII.

LE Fevre got up to the Imperial army just time enough to try what metal his sword was made of, at the defeat of the Turks before Belgrade; but a series of unmerited mischance

had pursued him from that moment, and trode close upon his heels for four years together after: He had withstood these buffetings to the last, till sickness overtook him at Marseilles, from whence he wrote my uncle Toby word, he had lost his time, his services, his health, and, in short, every thing but his sword;—and was waiting for the first ship to return back to him.

As this letter came to hand about six weeks before Susannah's accident, Le Fevre was hourly expected; and was uppermost in my uncle Toby's mind all the time my father was giving him and Yorick a description of what kind of a person he would chose for a preceptor to me: But as my uncle Toby thought my father at first somewhat fanciful in the accomplishments he required, he forbore mentioning Le Fevre's name ——till the character, by Yorick's interposition, ending, unexpectedly, in one who should be gentle tempered, and generous, and good, it impressed the image of Le Fevre, and his interest, upon my uncle Toby so forcibly, he rose instantly off his chair; and laying down his pipe, in order to take hold of both my father's hands—I beg, brother Shandy, said my uncle Toby, I may recommend poor Le Fevre's son to you—I beseech you, do, added Yorick—He has a good heart, said my uncle Toby—And a brave one too, an' please your honor, said the Corporal.

—The best hearts, Trim, are ever the bravest, replied my uncle Toby—and the greatest cowards, an' please your honor, in our regiment, were the greatest rascals in it—There was serjeant Kumber, and ensign——

We'll talk of them, said my father, another time.

## CHAP. XIV.

WHAT a jovial and a merry world would this be, may it please your worships, but for that inextricable labyrinth of debts, cares, woes, want, grief, discontent, melancholy, large jointures, impositions, and lies!

Doctor Slop, like a son of a w——, as my father called him for it,—to exalt himself—debased me to death, and made ten thousand times more of Susannah's accident, than there was any grounds for; so that in a week's time, or less, it was in every body's mouth, that poor master Shandy * * * * * * entirely——And fame, who loves to double every thing,—in three days more, had sworn positively she saw it; and all the world, as usual, gave credit to her evidence——"That the nursery window had not only * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * ; but that * * * * * * * * * * * * *'s also."

Could the world have been sued like a BODY-CORPORATE,——my father had brought an action upon the case, and trounced it sufficiently; but, to fall foul of individuals about it—as every soul who had mentioned the affair, did it with the greatest pity imaginable——'twas like flying in the very face of his best friends:—And yet to acquiesce under the report, in silence—was to acknowledge it openly—at least in the opinion of one half of the world; and to make a bustle again, in contradicting it——was to confirm it as strongly in the opinion of the other half.

—Was ever poor devil of a country gentleman so hampered? said my father.

I would show him publicly, said my uncle Toby, at the market cross.

—'Twill have no effect, said my father.

## CHAP. XV.

—I'LL put him, however, into breeches, said my father,—let the world say what it will.

## CHAP. XVI.

THERE are a thousand resolutions, sir, both in church and state, as well as in matters, madam, of a more private concern,—which, tho' they have carried all the appearance in the world of being taken, and entered upon in a hasty, hair-brained, and unadvised manner, were, notwithstanding this, (and could you or I have got into the cabinet, or stood behind the curtain, we should have found it was so) weighed, poised and perpended—argued upon—canvassed thro'—entered into, and examined on all sides with so much coolness, that the GODDESS of COOLNESS herself (I do not take upon me to prove her existence) could neither have wished it, or done it better.

Of the number of these was my father's resolution of putting me into breeches; which tho' determined at once—in a kind of huff, and a-*defiance of all* mankind, had, nevertheless, been

pro'd and con'd, and judicially talked over betwixt him and my mother about a month before, in two several beds of justice, which my father had held for that purpose. I shall explain the nature of these beds of justice in my next chapter; and, in the chapter following that, you shall step with me, madam, behind the curtain, only to hear in what kind of manner my father and my mother debated, between themselves, this affair of the breeches, from which you may form an idea how they debated all lesser matters.

## CHAP. XVII.

THE ancient Goths of Germany, who (the learned Culverius is positive) were first seated in the country between the Vistula and the Oder, and who afterwards incorporated the Herculi, the Bugians, and some other Vandallic clans to 'em, had all of them a wise custom of debating every thing of importance to their state, twice; that is,——once drunk, and once sober: ——Drunk—that their councils might not want vigor;——and sober——that they might not discretion.

Now my father, being entirely a water drinker, —was a long time gravelled almost to death, in turning this as much to his advantage, as he did every other thing, which the ancients did or said; and it was not till the seventh year of his marriage, after a thousand fruitless experiments and devices, that he hit upon an expedient which answered the purpose:——And that was, when any difficult and momentous point was to be settled in the family, which required great sobriety, and great spirit too, in its determination,——he fixed

and set apart the first Sunday night in the month, and the Saturday night which immediately preceded it, to argue it over in bed with my mother: By which contrivance, if you consider, sir, with yourself, * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

These my father, humorously enough, called his beds of justice;——for, from the two different councils taken in these two different humors, a middle one was generally found out, which touched the point of wisdom as well as if he had got drunk and sober an hundred times.

It must not be made a secret of to the world, that this answers full as well in literary discussions, as either in military or conjugal; but it is not every author that can try the experiment as the Goths and Vandals did it——or, if he can, may it be always for his body's health? and to do it, as my father did it,—am I sure it would be always for his soul's?

My way is this:——

In all nice and ticklish discussions,—(of which, heaven knows, there are but too many in my book)—where I find I cannot take a step without the danger of having either their worships or their reverences upon my back——I write one half full, and t'other fasting;——or write it all full, and correct it fasting;——or write it fasting, and correct it full,—for they all come to the same thing:——So that, with a less variation from my father's plan, than my father's from the Gothic—I feel myself upon a par with him in his first bed of justice,—and no way inferior to him in his second——These different and almost irreconcileable *effects*, flow uniformly from the wise and

wonderful mechanism of nature,——of which—be her's the honor.——All that we can do, is, to turn and work the machine to the improvement and better manufactory of the arts and sciences.—

Now, when I write full,—I write as if I was never to write fasting again as long as I live;—that is, I write free from the cares, as well as the terrors of the world.—I count not the number of my scars,—nor does my fancy go forth into dark entries and bye-corners to antedate my stabs.—— In a word, my pen takes its course; and I write on, as much from the fulness of my heart as my stomach.———

But when, an' please your honors, I indite fasting; 'tis a different story.——I pay the world all possible attention and respect,——and have as great a share (whilst it lasts) of that understrapping virtue of discretion, as the best of you.—So that betwixt both, I write a careless kind of a civil, nonsensical, good-humored, Shandean book, which will do your hearts good———

——And all your heads too, provided you understand it.

## CHAP. XVIII.

WE should begin, said my father, turning himself half round in bed, and shifting his pillow a little towards my mother's, as he opened the debate—we should begin to think, Mrs. Shandy, of putting this boy into breeches.

We should so,—said my mother——We defer it, my dear, quoth my father, shamefully.

I think we do, Mr. Shandy,.....said my mother.

.....Not but the child looks extremely well, said my father, in his vests and tunics.....

.....He does look very well in them,.....replied my mother.....

.....And for that reason, it would almost be a sin, added my father, to take him out of 'em.

It would so....,said my mother :....But, indeed, he is growing a very tall lad,...rejoined my father.

.....He is very tall for his age, indeed...said my mother.....

.....I can-not (making two syllables of it) imagine, quoth my father, who the deuce he takes after.

I cannot conceive, for my life,....said my mother.....

Humph !.....said my father.

(The dialogue ceased for a moment.)

.....I am very short, myself.....continued my father gravely.

You are very short, Mr. Shandy,.....said my mother.....

Humph ! quoth my father to himself, a second time : In muttering which, he plucked his pillow a little farther from my mother's.....and turning about again, there was an end of the debate for three minutes and an half.

.....When he gets these breeches made, cried my father, in a higher tone, he'll look like a beast in 'em.

He will be very awkard in them at first, replied my mother.....

.....And 'twill be lucky, if that's the worst on't, added my father.

It will be very lucky, answered my mother.....

I suppose, replied my father,.....making some pause first....he'll be exactly like other people's children.....

Exactly, said my mother.....

.....Tho' I should be sorry for that, added my father : And so the debate stopped again.

.....,...They should be of leather, said my father, turning him about again.....

They will last him, said my mother, the longest.

But he can have no linings to 'em replied, my father.

He cannot, said my mother.

'Twere better to have them of fustian, quoth my father.

Nothing can be better, quoth my mother.....

.....Except dimity,....replied my father.....

'Tis best of all,....replied my mother.....

....One must not give him his death, however, .....interrupted my father.

By no means, said my mother :.....And so the dialogue stood still again.

I am resolved however, quoth my father, breaking silence the fourth time, he shall have no pockets *in them*.....

.....There is no occasion for any, said my mother.....

I mean in his coat and waistcoat,.....cried my father.

.....I mean so too, replied my mother.....

.....Tho' if he gets a gig or a top.....poor souls! it is a crown and sceptre to them,....they should have where to secure it.....

Order it as you please, Mr. Shandy, replied my mother.....

.....But don't you think it right? added my father, pressing the point home to her.

Perfectly, said my mother, if it pleases you, Mr. Shandy.....

.....There's for you! cried my father, losing temper.....Pleases me!....You never will distinguish, Mrs. Shandy, nor shall I ever teach you to do it, betwixt a point of pleasure and a point of convenience.—This was on the Sunday night;.... and farther this chapter sayeth not.

## CHAP. XIX.

AFTER my father had debated the affair of the breeches with my mother,....he consulted Albertus Rubenius upon it; and Albertus Rubenius used my father ten times worse in the consultation (if possible) than even my father had *used my mother*: For as Rubenius had wrote a

quarto express, De re Vestiaria Veterum,——it was Rubenius's business to have given my father some lights.——On the contrary, my father might as well have thought of extracting the seven cardinal virtues out of a long beard, as of extracting a single word out of Rubenius upon the subject.

Upon every article of antient dress, Rubenius was very communicative to my father; he gave him a full and satisfactory account of

The Toga, or loose gown.
The Chlamys.
The Ephod.
The Tunica, or jacket.
The Synthesis.
The Pænula.
The Lacerna, with its Cucullus.
The Paludamentum.
The Prætexta.
The Sagum, or soldier's jerkin.
The Trabea: Of which, according to Suetonius, there were three kinds.....

.....But what are all these to the breeches? said my father.

Rubenius threw him down upon the counter all kinds of shoes which had been in fashion with the Romans,....There was,

The open shoe.
The close shoe.
The slip shoe.
The wooden shoe.
The soc.
The buskin.

And the military shoe with the hob-nails in it, which Juvenal takes notice of.

There were, The clogs,

The patins.
The pantoufles.
The brogues.
The sandals with latchets to them.
There was, The felt shoe.
The linen shoe.
The laced shoe.
The braided shoe.
The calceus incisus.
And The calceus rostratus.

Rubenius showed my father how well they all fitted,—in what manner they laced on,—with what points, straps, thongs, latchets, ribands, jags and ends.——

—But I want to be informed about the breeches, said my father.

Albertus Rubenius informed my father that the Romans manufactured stuffs of various fabrics, —some plain,—some striped,—others diapered throughout the whole contexture of the wool, with silk and gold—That linen did not begin to be in common use, till towards the declension of the empire, when the Egyptians, coming to settle amongst them, brought it into vogue.

—That persons of quality and fortune distinguished themselves by the fineness and whiteness of their clothes; which color (next to purple, which was appropriated to the great offices,) they most affected and wore on their birth-days and public rejoicings. That it appeared from the best historians of those times, that they frequently sent their clothes to the fuller, to be cleaned and whitened—but that the inferior people, to avoid that expense, generally wore brown clothes, and of a something coarser texture,—till towards

the beginning of Augustus's reign, when the slave dressed like his master, and almost every distinction of habiliment was lost, but the Latus Clavus.

And what was the Latus Clavus? said my father.

Rubenius told him, that the point was still litigating amongst the learned:—That Egnatius Sigonius, Bossius, Ticinensis, Bafius, Budæus, Salmasius, Lipsius, Lazius, Isaac Causabon, and Joseph Scaliger, all differed from each other,—and he from them: That some took it to be the button,—some the coat itself,—others only the color of it:—That the great Bafius, in his Wardrobe of the Ancients, chap. xii—honestly said, he knew not what it was,—whether a tibula,—a stud,—a button,—a loop,—a buckle,—or clasps and keepers.———

—My father lost the horse, but not the saddle—They are hooks and eyes, said my father—and with hooks and eyes he ordered my breeches to be made.

## CHAP. XX.

WE are now going to enter upon a new scene of events.

—Leave we then the breeches in the taylor's hands, with my father standing over him with his cane, reading him as he sat at work a lecture upon the latus clavus, and pointing to the precise part of the waistband, where he was determined to have it sewed on.

Leave we my mother——(truest of all the Pococurante's of her sex !)——careless about it, as about every thing else in the world which concerned her ;——that is, indifferent whether it was done this way or that,——provided it was but done at all.——

Leave we Slop likewise to the full profits of all my dishonors.

Leave we poor Le Fever to recover, and get home from Marseilles as he can——And last of all——because the hardest of all,——

Let us leave, if possible, myself :——But 'tis impossible,——I must go along with you to the end of the work.

## CHAP. XXI.

IF the reader has not a clear conception of the rood and a half of ground which lay at the bottom of my uncle Toby's kitchen garden, and which was the scene of so many of his delicious hours,—the fault is not in me, but in his imagination ;——for I am sure I gave him so minute a description, I was almost ashamed of it.

When FATE was looking forwards one afternoon, into the great transactions of future times, —and recollected for what purposes this little plot, by a decree fast bound down in iron, had been destined,—she gave a nod to NATURE.——'Twas enough—Nature threw half a spadeful of the kindliest *compost* upon it, and just so much clay in

it, as to retain the forms of angles and indentings, ——and so little of it too, as not to cling to the spade, and render works of so much glory, nasty in foul weather.

My uncle Toby came down, as the reader has been informed, with plans along with him, of almost every fortified town in Italy and Flanders; so, let the duke of Marlborough, or the Allies, have set down before what town they pleased, my uncle Toby was prepared for them.

His way, which was the simplest one in the world, was this; as soon as ever a town was invested (but sooner when the design was known) to take the plan of it, (let it be what town it would) and enlarge it upon a scale to the exact size of his bowling-green; upon the surface of which, by means of a large roll of packthread, and a number of small piquets driven into the ground, at the several angles and redans, he transferred the lines from his paper; then taking the profile of the place, with its works, to determine the depths and slopes of the ditches,——the talus of the glacis, and the precise height of the several banquets, parapets, &c.—he set the Corporal to work—and sweetly went it on:——The nature of the soil,—the nature of the work itself,—and above all, the good nature of my uncle Toby, sitting by from morning to night, and chatting kindly with the Corporal upon past done deeds,—left LABOR little else but the ceremony of ths name.

When the place was finished in this manner, and put into a proper posture of defence,——— it was invested,——and my uncle Toby and the Corporal began to run their first parallel——I beg I may not be interrupted in my story, by being told, that the first parallel should be at least three

hundred toises distant from the main body of the place,—and that I have not left a single inch for it;—for my uncle Toby took the liberty of encroaching upon the kitchen garden, for the sake of enlarging his works on the bowling-green; and for that reason generally ran his first and second paraliels betwixt two rows of his cabbages and his collíflowers; the conveniencies and inconveniencies of which will be considered at large in the history of my uncle Toby's and the Corporal's campaigns, of which, this I'm now writing is but a sketch, and will be finished, if I conjecture right, in three pages (but there is no guessing)—The campaigns themselves will take up as many books; and therefore I apprehend it would be hanging too great a weight of one kind of matter in so flimsy a performance as this, to rhapsodize them, as I once intended, into the body of the work—Surely they had better be printed apart—We'll consider the affair—so take the following sketch of them in the mean time.

## CHAP. XXII.

WHEN the town, with its works, was finished, my uncle Toby and the Corporal began to run their first parallel——not at random or any how—but from the same points and distances the Allies had begun to run theirs; and, regulating their approaches and attacks, by the accounts my uncle Toby received from the daily papers,—they went on, during the whole siege, step by step with the Allies.

When the duke of Marlborough made a lodgment,—*my uncle* Toby made a lodgment too—

And when the face of a bastion was battered down, or a defence ruined, the Corporal took his mattock and did as much,—and so on;——gaining ground, and making themselves masters of the works one after another, till the town fell into their hands.

To one who took pleasure in the happy state of others, there could not have been a greater sight in the world, than on a post-morning, in which a practicable breach had been made by the duke of Marlborough in the main body of the place,—to have stood behind the horn-beam hedge, and observed the spirit with which my uncle Toby, with Trim behind him, sallied forth;—the one with the Gazette in his hand,—the other with a spade on his shoulder, to execute the contents———What an honest triumph in my uncle Toby's looks, as he marched up to the ramparts! what intense pleasure swimming in his eye as he stood over the Corporal, reading the paragraph ten times over to him, as he was at work, lest, peradventure, he should make the branch an inch too wide,—or leave it an inch too narrow.—But when the chamade was beat, and the Corporal helped my uncle up it, and followed with the colors in his hand, to fix them upon the ramparts ———Heaven! Earth! Sea!——But what avail apostrophes? With all your elements, wet or dry, you never compounded so intoxicating a draught!

In this tract of happiness, for many years, without one interruption to it, except now and then when the wind continued to blow due west for a week or ten days together, which detained the Flanders mail, and kept them so long in torture, ——but still it was the torture of the happy—In this tract, I say, did my uncle Toby and Trim move for many years, every year of which, and

sometimes every month, from the invention of either the one or the other of them, adding some new conceit or quirk of improvement to their operations, which always opened fresh springs of delight in carrying them on.

The first year's campaign was carried on, from beginning to end, in the plain and simple method I have related.

In the second year, in which my uncle Toby took Liege and Ruremond, he thought he might afford the expense of four handsome draw-bridges, two of which I have given an exact description of, in the former part of my work.

At the latter end of the same year, he added a couple of gates with portcullises :——These last were converted afterwards into orgues, as the better thing ; and during the winter of the same year, my uncle Toby, instead of a new suit of clothes, which he always had at Christmas, treated himself with a handsome sentry-box, to stand at the corner of the bowling-green, betwixt which point and the foot of the glacis, there was left a little kind of an esplanade, for him and the Corporal to confer and hold councils of war upon.

——The sentry-box was in case of rain.

All these were painted white three times over the ensuing spring, which enabled my uncle Toby to take the field with great splendor.

My father would often say to Yorick, that if any mortal in the whole universe had done such a thing, except his brother Toby, it would have been looked upon by the world as one of the most refined satires upon the parade and prancing manner, in which Louis XIV. from the beginning of the war, but particularly that very year, had taken the field——But 'tis not my brother Toby's nature, kind soul ! my father would add, to insult *any one*.————But let us go on.

## CHAP. XXIII.

I MUST observe, that altho' in the first year's campaign, the word town is often mentioned ——yet there was no town at that time within the polygon; that addition was not made till the summer following the spring in which the bridges and sentry-box were painted, which was the third year of my uncle Toby's campaigns,———when, upon his taking Amberg, Bonn, and Rhinberg, and Huy and Limbourg, one after another, a thought came into the Corporal's head, that to talk of taking so many towns, without one TOWN to show for it—was a very nonsensical way of going to work, and so proposed to my uncle Toby, that they should have a little model of a town built for them,—to be run up together, of slit deals, and then painted, and clapped within the interior polygon, to serve for all.

My uncle Toby felt the good of the project instantly, and instantly agreed to it, but with the addition of two singular improvements, of which he was almost as proud, as if he had been the original inventor of the project himself.

The one was, to have the town built exactly in the style of those, of which it was most likely to be the representative:—with grated windows, and the gable ends of the houses facing the streets, &c. &c. as those in Ghent and Bruges, and the rest of the towns in Brabant and Flanders.

The other was, not to have the houses run up together, as the Corporal proposed, but to have

every house independent, to hook on, or off, so as to form into the plan of whatever town they pleased.—This was put directly into hand; and many and many a look of mutual congratulation was exchanged between my uncle Toby and the Corporal, as the carpenter did the work.

.....It answered prodigiously the next summer ....the town was a perfect Proteus,....It was Landen, and Trerbach, and Santvliet, and Drusen, and Hagenau,.....and then it was Ostend, and Menin, and Aeth, and Dendermond.

.....Surely never did any TOWN act so many parts, since Sodom and Gomorrah, as my uncle Toby's town did.

In the fourth year, my uncle Toby, thinking a town looked foolishly without a church, added a very fine one with a steeple.....Trim was for having bells in it....My uncle Toby said, the metal had better be cast into cannon.

This led the way the next campaign for half a dozen brass field-pieces,—to be planted three and three, on each side of my uncle Toby's sentry-box; and, in a short time, these led the way for a train of somewhat larger,—and so on—(as must always be the case in hobby-horsical affairs) from pieces of half an inch bore, till it came at last to my father's jack-boots.

The next year, which was that in which Lisle was besieged, and at the close of which both Ghent and Bruges fell into our hands,.....my uncle Toby was sadly put to it for proper ammunition;.....I say proper ammunition.....because his great artillery would not bear powder:.....and it was well for the Shandy family they would not.

.....For so full were the papers, from the beginning to the end of the siege, of the incessant firings kept up by the besiegers.....and so heated was my uncle Toby's imagination with the accounts of them, that he had infallibly shot away all his estate.

SOMETHING, therefore, was wanting, as a succedaneum, especially in one or two of the more violent paroxysms of the siege, to keep up something like a continual firing in the imagination, ——and this something the Corporal, whose principal strength lay in invention, supplied by an entire new system of battering of his own,——without which, this had been objected to by military critics, to the end of the world, as one of the great desiderata of my uncle Toby's apparatus.

This will not be explained the worse, for setting off, as I generally do, at a little distance from the subject.

## CHAP. XXIV.

WITH two or three other trinkets, small in themselves, but of great regard, which poor Tom, the Corporal's unfortunate brother, had sent him over with the account of his marriage with the Jew's widow.....there was

A Montero-cap and two Turkish tobacco-pipes.

The Montero-cap I shall describe by and by. .....The Turkish tobacco-pipes had nothing particular in them; they were fitted up and ornamented, as usual, with flexible tubes of Morocco

leather and gold wire, and mounted at their ends, the one of them with ivory,.....the other with black ebony, tipp'd with silver.

My father, who saw all things in lights different from the rest of the world, would say to the Corporal, that he ought to look upon these two presents, more as tokens of his brother's nicety, than his affection.....Tom did not care, Trim, he would say, to put on the cap, or to smoke in the tobacco-pipe of a Jew,—God bless your honor, the Corporal would say, (giving a strong reason to the contrary).....how can that be ?.....

The Montero-cap was scarlet, of a superfine Spanish cloth, dyed in grain, and mounted all round with fur, except about four inches in the front, which was faced with a light blue, slightly embroidered,.....and seemed to have been the property of a Portuguese quarter-master, not of foot, but of horse, as the word denotes.

The Corporal was not a little proud of it, as well for his own sake, as the sake of the giver, so seldom or never put it on but upon GALA-days; and yet never was a Montero-cap put to so many uses: For in all controverted points, whether military or culinary, provided the Corporal was sure he was in the right,——it was either his oath,—his wager,——or his gift.

—'Twas his gift in the present case.

I'll be bound, said the Corporal, speaking to himself, to give away my Montero-cap to the first beggar who comes to the door, if I do not manage this matter to his honor's satisfaction.

The completion was no farther off, than the very next morning: Which was that of the storm of the counterscarp betwixt the Lower Deule, to the right, and the gate of St. Andrew,——and on the left, between St. Magdalen's and the river.

As this was the most memorable attack in the whole war,——the most gallant and obstinate on both sides,——and, I must add, the most bloody too, for it cost the Allies themselves that morning above eleven hundred men,—my uncle Toby prepared himself for it with a more than ordinary solemnity.

The eve which preceded, as my uncle Toby went to bed, he ordered his Ramillie wig, which had lain inside out for many years in the corner of an old campaigning trunk, which stood by his bed-side, to be taken out and laid upon the lid of it, ready for the morning;—and the very first thing he did in his shirt, when he had stepped out of bed, my uncle Toby, after he had turned the rough side outwards,—put it on:—This done, he proceeded next to his breeches, and having buttoned the waistband, he forthwith buckled on his sword-belt, and had got his sword half way in,———when he considered he should want shaving, and that it would be very inconvenient doing it with his sword on,———so took it off:—In assaying to put on his regimental coat and waistcoat, my uncle Toby found the same objection in his wig—so that went off too:——So that, what with one thing, and what with another, as always falls out when a man is in the most haste,—'twas ten o'clock, which was half an hour later than his usual time, before my uncle Toby sallied out.

## CHAP. XXV.

MY uncle Toby had scarce turned the corner of his yew hedge, which separated his kitchen-garden from his bowling-green, when he perceived the Corporal had begun the attack without him.——

Let me stop and give you a picture of the Corporal's apparatus, and of the Corporal himself in the height of this attack, just as it struck my uncle Toby, as he turned towards the sentry-box, where the Corporal was at work;—for in Nature there is not such another,—nor can any combination of all that is grotesque and whimsical in her works produce its equal.

The Corporal——

——Tread lightly on his ashes, ye men of genius, for he was your kinsman:

Weed his grave clean, ye men of goodness,—for he was your brother.——Oh Corporal! had I thee but now,—now that I am able to give thee a dinner and protection,—how would I cherish thee! thou should'st wear thy Montero-cap every hour of the day, and every day of the week,—— and when it was worn out, I would purchase thee a couple like it:——But, alas! alas! alas! now that I can do this, in spite of their reverences—the occasion is lost—for thou art gone:—Thy genius fled up to the stars, from whence it came;——and that warm heart of thine, with all its generous and open vessels, compressed into a clod of the valley!

—But what——what is this to that future and dreaded page, where I look towards the velvet pall, decorated with the military ensigns of thy master—the first—the foremost of created beings; where—I shall see thee, faithful servant! laying his sword and scabbard, with a trembling hand, across his coffin, and then returning pale as ashes to the door, to take his mourning horse by the bridle, to follow his hearse, as he directed thee;——where—all my father's systems shall be baffled by his sorrows; and, in spite of his philosophy I shall behold him, as he inspects the lackered plate, twice taking his spectacles from off his nose, to wipe away the dew which nature has shed upon them.——When I see him cast in the rosemary with an air of disconsolation, which cries through my ears,—O Toby! in what corner of the world shall I seek thy fellow?

—Gracious powers! which erst have opened the lips of the dumb in his distress, and made the tongue of the stammerer speak plain——when I shall arrive at this dreaded page, deal not with me, then, with a stinted hand.

## CHAP. XXVI.

THE Corporal, who the night before had resolved in his mind, to supply the grand desideratum, of keeping up something like an incessant firing upon the enemy, during the heat of the attack,—had no farther idea in his fancy at that time, than a contrivance of smoking tobacco against the town, out of one of my uncle Toby's six field pieces, which were planted on each side of

his sentry-box; the means of effecting which, occurring to his fancy at the same time, though he had pledged his cap, he thought it no danger from the miscarriage of his projects.

Upon turning it this way, and that, a little in his mind, he soon began to find out, that, by means of his two Turkish tobacco-pipes, with the supplement of three smaller tubes of wash-leather at each of their lower ends, to be tagg'd by the same number of tin-pipes fitted to the touch-holes, and sealed with clay next the cannon, and then tied hermetically with waxed silk at their several insertions into the Morocco tube,—he should be able to fire the six field pieces all together, and with the same ease as to fire one.

Let no man say from what taggs and jaggs hints may not be cut out, for the advancement of human knowledge. Let no man, who has read my father's first and second beds of justice, ever rise up and say again, from collision of what kinds of bodies, light may, or may not be struck out, to carry the arts and sciences up to perfection.——Heaven! thou knowest how I love them; thou knowest the secrets of my heart, and that I would this moment give my shirt—Thou art a fool, Shandy, says Eugenius,—for thou hast but a dozen in the world,—and 'twill break thy set.——

No matter for that, Eugenius; I would give the shirt off my back to be burnt into tinder, were it only to satisfy one feverish inquirer, how many sparks, at one good stroke, a good flint and steel could strike into the tail of it.——Think ye not, that, in striking these in,—he might, peradventure, strike something out?——as sure as a gun.——

—But this project by the bye,

The Corporal set up the best part of the night, in bringing his to perfection; and having made a sufficient proof of his cannon, with charging them to the top with tobacco,——he went with contentment to bed.

## CHAP. XXVII.

THE Corporal had slipped out about ten minutes before my uncle Toby, in order to fix his apparatus, and just give the enemy a shot or two before my uncle Toby came.

He had drawn the six field-pieces, for this end, all close up together, in front of my uncle Toby's sentry-box, leaving only an interval of about a yard and a half betwixt the three, on the right and left, for the convenience of charging, &c.—and the sake, possibly, of two batteries, which he might think double the honor of one.

In the rear, and facing this opening, with his back to the door of the sentry-box, for fear of being flanked, had the Corporal wisely taken his post:—He held the ivory pipe, appertaining to the battery on the right, betwixt the finger and thumb on his right hand,—and the ebony pipe tipp'd with silver, which appertained to the battery on the left, betwixt the finger and thumb of the other;—and with his right knee fixed firm upon the ground, as if in the front rank of his platoon, was the Corporal, with his Montero-cap upon his head, furiously playing off his two cross batteries at the same time against the counter-guard, which faced the counterscarp, where the

attack was to be made that morning. His first intention, as I said, was no more than giving the enemy a single puff or two ;—but the pleasure of the puffs, as well as the puffing had insensibly got hold of the Corporal, and drawn him on from puff to puff, into the very height of the attack, by the time my uncle Toby joined him.

'Twas well for my father, that my uncle Toby had not his will to make that day.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

MY uncle Toby took the ivory pipe out of the Corporal's hand,—looked at it for half a minute, and returned it.

In less than two minutes my uncle Toby took the pipe from the Corporal again and raised it half-way to his mouth—then hastily gave it back a second time.

The Corporal redoubled the attack—my uncle Toby smiled—then looked grave—then smiled for a moment—then looked serious for a long time——Give me hold of the ivory pipe, Trim, said my uncle Toby—my uncle Toby put it to his lips—drew it back directly—gave a peep over the horn-beam hedge ;——never did my uncle Toby's mouth water so much for a pipe in his life.—— My uncle Toby retired into the sentry-box with the pipe in his hand.

—Dear uncle Toby ! don't go into the sentry-box with the pipe—there's no trusting a man's self with such a thing in such a corner.

## CHAP. XXIX.

I BEG the reader will assist me here, to wheel off my uncle Toby's ordnance behind the scenes——to remove his sentry-box, and clear the theatre, if possible, of horn-works and half-moons, and get the rest of his military apparatus out of the way:—That done, my dear friend Garrick, we'll snuff the candles bright——sweep the stage with a new broom——draw up the curtain, and exhibit my uncle Toby dressed in a new character, throughout which the world can have no idea how he will act: And yet, if pity be akin to love, ——and bravery no alien to it, you have seen enough of my uncle Toby in these, to trace these family likenesses betwixt the two passions (in case there is one) to your heart's content.

Vain science! thou assistest us in no case of this kind——and thou puzzlest us in every one.

There was, madam, in my uncle Toby, a singleness of heart, which misled him so far out of the little serpentine tracks in which things of this nature usually go on, you can——you can have no conception of it: With this, there was a plainness and simplicity of thinking, with such an unmistrusting ignorance of the plies and foldings of the heart of woman——and so naked and defenceless did he stand before you, (when a siege was out of his head) that you might have stood behind any one of your serpentine walks, and shot my uncle Toby, ten times in a day, thro' his liver, if nine times in a day, madam, had not served your purpose.

With all this, madam——and what confounded every thing as much on the other hand, my uncle Toby had that unparalleled modesty of nature I once told you of, and which, by the bye, stood eternal sentry upon his feelings, that you might as soon——But where am I going? These reflections crowd in upon me ten pages at least too soon, and take up that time which I ought to bestow upon facts.

## CHAP. XXX.

OF the few legitimate sons of Adam, whose breasts never felt what the sting of love was —(maintaining, first, all mysogynists to be bastards)—the greatest heroes of ancient and modern story have carried off, amongst them, nine parts in ten of the honor; and I wish, for their sakes, I had the key of my study out of my draw-well, only for five minutes, to tell you their names—recollect them I cannot—so be content to accept of these, for the present, in their stead.——

There was the great king Aldrovandus, and Bosphorus, and Cappadocius, and Dardanus, and Pontus, and Asius,—to say nothing of the iron-hearted Charles the XIIth, whom the countess of K***** herself could make nothing of.—— There was Babylonicus, and Mediterraneus, and Polixenes, and Persicus, and Prusicus, not one of whom (except Cappadocius and Pontus, who were both a little suspected) ever once bowed down his breast to the goddess—The truth is, they had all of them something else to do—and so had my uncle Toby,—till Fate—till Fate, I say, envying

his name the glory of being handed down to posterity with Aldrovandus's and the rest—she basely patched up the peace of Utrecht.

—Believe me, sirs, 'twas the worst deed she did that year.

## CHAP. XXXI.

AMONGST the many ill consequences of the treaty of Utrecht, it was within a point of giving my uncle Toby a surfeit of sieges, and tho' he recovered his appetite afterwards, yet Calais itself left not a deeper scar in Mary's heart, than Utrecht upon my uncle Toby's.—To the end of his life he never could hear Utrecht mentioned upon any account whatever,—or so much as read an article of news extracted out of the Utrecht gazette, without fetching a sigh, as if his heart would break in twain.

My father, who was a great MOTIVE-MONGER, and consequently a very dangerous person for a man to sit by, either laughing or crying——for he generally new your motive for doing both, much better than you knew it yourself—would always console my uncle Toby upon these occasions, in a way which showed plainly, he imagined my uncle Toby grieved for nothing in the whole affair, so much as the loss of his hobby-horse—Never mind, brother Toby, he would say—by God's blessing we shall have another war break out again some of these days; and when it does—the belligerent powers, if they would hang themselves, cannot keep us out of play.—I dare

'em, my dear Toby, he would add, to take countries without taking towns——or towns without sieges.

My uncle Toby never took this back-stroke of my father's at his hobby-horse kindly——He thought the stroke ungenerous; and the more so, because in striking the horse, he hit the rider too, and in the most dishonorable part a blow could fall: So that upon these occasions, he always laid down his pipe upon the table with more fire to defend himself than common.

I told the reader, this time two years, that my uncle Toby was not eloquent; and in the very same page gave an instance to the contrary:—— I repeat the observation, and a fact which contradicts it again.—He was not eloquent—it was not easy to my uncle Toby to make long harangues —and he hated florid ones; but there were occasions where the stream overflowed the man, and ran so counter to its usual course, that, in some parts, my uncle Toby, for a time, was at least equal to Tertullus—but in others, in my own opinion, infinitely above him.

My father was so highly pleased with one of these apologetical orations of my uncle Toby's, which he had delivered one evening before him and Yorick, that he wrote it down before he went to bed.

I have had the good fortune to meet with it amongst my father's papers, with here and there an insertion of his own, betwixt two crooks, thus [ ], and is indorsed

My brother Toby's justification of his own principles and conduct, in wishing to continue the war.

I may safely say, I have read over this apologetical oration of my uncle Toby's a hundred times, and think it so fine a model of defence, and shows so sweet a temperament of gallantry and good principles in him, that I give it the world, word for word (interlineations and all) as I find it.

## CHAP. XXXII.

### My uncle TOBY's apologetical oration.

I AM not insensible, brother Shandy, that when a man, whose profession is in arms, wishes, as I have done, for war,——it has an ill aspect to the world;———and that, how just and right soever his motives and intentions may be,——he stands in an uneasy posture, in vindicating himself from private views in doing it.

For this cause, if a soldier is a prudent man, which he may be, without being a jot the less brave, he will be sure not to utter his wish in the hearing of an enemy; for, say what he will, an enemy will not believe him.——He will be cautious of doing it even to a friend,—lest he may suffer in his esteem:——But if his heart is overcharged, and a secret sigh for arms must have its vent, he will reserve it for the ear of a brother, who knows his character to the bottom, and what his true notions, dispositions, and principles of honor are. What, I hope, I have been in all these, brother Shandy, would be unbecoming in me to say:—Much worse, I know, have I been than I ought,——and something worse, perhaps, than I think: But such as I am, you, my dear brother

Shandy, who have sucked the same breasts with me,——and with whom I have been brought up from my cradle,——and from whose knowledge, from the first hours of our boyish pastimes, down to this, I have concealed no one action of my life, and scarce a thought in it—Such as I am, brother, you must, by this time, know me, with all my vices, and with all my weaknesses too, whether of my age, my temper, my passions, or my understanding.

Tell me, then, my dear brother Shandy, upon which of them it is, that when I condemned the peace of Utrecht, and grieved the war was not carried on with vigor a little longer, you should think your brother did it upon unworthy views; or that, in wishing for war, he should be bad enough to wish more of his fellow-creatures slain, ——more slaves made, and more families driven from their peaceful habitations, merely for his own pleasure:——Tell me, brother Shandy, upon what one deed of mine do you ground it?—[The devil a deed do I know of, dear Toby, but one for an hundred pounds, which I lent thee to carry on these cursed sieges.]

If, when I was a school-boy, I could not hear a drum beat, but my heart beat with it——was it my fault?—Did I plant the propensity there?—Did I sound the alarm within, or Nature?

When Guy, Earl of Warwick, and Parismus and Parismenus, and Valentine and Orson, and the Seven Champions of England were handed around the school,——were they not all purchased with my own pocket-money? Was that selfish, brother Shandy? When we read over the siege of Troy, which lasted ten years and eight months, —tho' with such a train of artillery as we had at Namur, the town might have been carried in a

week—was I not as much concerned for the destruction of the Greeks and Trojans as any boy of the whole school? Had I not three strokes of a ferula given me, two on my right hand and one on my left, for calling Helena a bitch for it? Did any one of you shed more tears for Hector? And when king Priam came to the camp to beg his body, and returned weeping back to Troy without it,——you know, brother, I could not eat my dinner——

——Did that bespeak me cruel? or because, brother Shandy, my blood flew out into the camp, and my heart panted for war.—was it a proof it could not ache for the distresses of war too?

O brother,! 'tis one thing for a soldier to gather laurels,—and 'tis another to scatter cypress ——[Who told thee, my dear Toby, that cypress was used by the ancients on mournful occasions?]

—'Tis one thing, brother Shandy, for a soldier to hazard his own life——to leap first down into the trench, where he is sure to be cut in pieces: ——'Tis one one thing, from public spirit, and a thirst of glory, to enter the breach the first man, ——to stand in the foremost rank, and march bravely on with drums and trumpets, and colors flying about his ears:——'Tis one thing, I say, brother Shandy, to do this——and, 'tis another thing, to reflect on the miseries of war;—to view the desolations of whole countries, and consider the intolerable fatigues and hardships which the soldier himself, the instrument who works them, is forced (for sixpence a day, if he can get it) to undergo.

Need I be told, dear Yorick, as I was by you, in Le Feyre's funeral sermon, That so soft and

gentle a creature, born to love, to mercy, and kindness, as man is, was not shaped for this?—But why did you not add, Yorick,——if not by NATURE—that he is so by NECESSITY?—For what is war? what is it, Yorick, when fought, as ours has been, upon principles of liberty, and upon principles of honor—what is it, but the getting together of quiet and harmless people, with their swords in their hands, to keep the ambitious and the turbulent within bounds? And heaven is my witness, brother Shandy, that the pleasure I have taken in these things—and that infinite delight, in particular, which has attended my sieges in my bowling-green, has arisen within me, and I hope in the Corporal too, from the consciousness we both had, that, in carrying them on, we were answering the great ends of our creation.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

I TOLD the Cristian reader——I say Christian—hoping he is one—and if he is not, I am sorry for it—and only beg he will consider the matter with himself, and not lay the blame entirely upon this book——

I told him, sir,——for, in good truth, when a man is telling a story in the strange way I do mine, he is obliged continually to be going backwards and forwards, to keep all tight together in the reader's fancy——which, for my own part, if I did not take heed to do more than at first, there is so much unfixed and equivocal matter starting up, with so many breaks and gaps in it—and so *little service* do the stars afford, which, neverthe-

less, I hang up in some of the darkest passages, knowing that the world is apt to lose its way, with all the lights the sun itself at noon-day can give it —and now you see I am lost myself!—

—But 'tis my father's fault; and whenever my brains come to be dissected, you will perceive, without spectacles, that he has left a large uneven thread, as you sometimes see in an unsaleable piece of cambric, running along the whole length of the web, and so untowardly, you cannot so much as cut out a * *, (here I hang up a couple of lights again)—or a fillet, or a thumb stall, but it is seen or felt.

Quanto id diligentius in liberis procreandis cavendum, saveth Carden. All which being considered, and that you see 'tis morally impracticable for me to wind this round to where I set out—

I begin the chapter over again.

## CHAP. XXXIV.

I TOLD the Christian readers, in the beginning of the chapter which preceded my uncle Toby's apologetical oration,—tho' in a different trope from what I shall make use of now, That the peace of Utrecht was within an ace of creating the same shyness betwixt my uncle Toby and his hobby-horse, as it did betwixt the Queen and the rest of the confederating powers.

There is an indignant way, in which a man *sometimes* dismounts his horse, which as good as

says to him, "I'll go a foot, sir, all the days of "my life, before I would ride a single mile upon "your back again." Now, my uncle Toby could not be said to dismount his horse in this manner; for, in strictness of language, he could not be said to dismount his horse at all,—his horse rather flung him—and sometimes viciously, which made my uncle Toby take it ten times more unkindly. Let this matter be settled by state jockies as they like—it created, I say, a sort of shyness betwixt my uncle Toby and his hobby-horse—— He had no occasion for him from the month of March to November, which was the summer after the articles were signed, except it was now and then to take a short ride out, just to see that the fortifications and harbor of Dunkirk were demolished, according to stipulation.

The French were so backward all that summer in setting about that affair, and monsieur Tugghe, the deputy from the magistrates of Dunkirk, presented so many affecting petitions to the Queen, beseeching her majesty, to cause only her thunderbolts to fall upon the martial works, which might have incurred her displeasure,——but to spare——to spare the mole, for the mole's sake; which, in its naked situation, could be no more than an object of pity——and the Queen (who was but a woman) being of a pitiful disposition, and her ministers also, they not wishing in their hearts to have the town dismantled, for these private reasons, * * * *

* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *

*; so that the whole went heavily on with my uncle Toby; insomuch, that it was not within *three* full months, after he and the Corporal had

constructed the town, and put it in a condition to be destroyed, that the several commandants, commissaries, deputies, negotiators, and intendants, would permit him to set about it.——Fatal interval of inactivity!

The Corporal was for beginning the demolition, by making a breach in the ramparts, or main fortifications of the town——No,——— that will never do, Corporal, said my uncle Toby; for, in going that way to work with the town, the English garrison will not be safe in it an hour; because, if the French are treacherous—They are treacherous as devils, an' please your honor, said the Corporal—It gives me concern always when I hear it, Trim, said my uncle Toby, ——for they don't want personal bravery; and if a breach is made in the ramparts, they may enter it, and make themselves masters of the place when they please.——Let them enter it, said the Corporal, lifting up his pioneer's spade in both his hands, as if he was going to lay about him with it,——let them enter, an' please your honor, if they dare.———In cases like this, Corporal, said my uncle Toby, slipping his right hand down to the middle of his cane, and holding it afterwards truncheon wise, with his fore-finger extended,———'tis no part of the consideration of a commandant, what the enemy dare———or what they dare not do; he must act with prudence. We will begin with the outworks both towards the sea and the land, and particularly with fort Louis, the most distant of them all, and demolish it first,———and the rest, one by one, both on our right and left, as we retreat towards the town;———then we'll demolish the mole, ———next fill up the harbour,———then retire into the citadel, and blow it up into the air; and having done that, Corporal, we'll embark for

England.—We are there, quoth the Corporal, recollecting himself.——Very true, said my uncle Toby———looking at the church.

## CHAP. XXXV.

A DELUSIVE, delicious consultation or two of this kind, betwixt my uncle Toby and Trim, upon the demolition of Dunkirk,—for a moment rallied by the ideas of those pleasures, which were slipping from under him :—Still—still all went on heavily———the magic left the mind the weaker.—STILLNESS with SILENCE at her back, entered the solitary parlor, and drew their gauzy mantle over my uncle Toby's head ; ——and LISTLESSNESS, with her lax fibre and undirected eye, sat quietly down beside him in his arm chair.———No longer Amberg, and Rhinberg, and Limbourg, and Huy, and Bonn, in one year———and the prospect of Landen, and Trerbach, and Drusen, and Dendermond, the next—hurried on the blood !——No longer did saps, and mines, and blinds, and gabions, and palisadoes, keep out this fair enemy of man's repose :——— No more could my uncle Toby,—after passing the French lines, as he eat his egg at supper, from thence break into the heart of France, ———cross over the Oyes, and, with all Picardie open behind him, march up to the gates of Paris, and fall asleep with nothing but ideas of glory : ———No more was he to dream, he had fixed the royal standard upon the tower of the Bastile, and awake with it streaming in his head.

——Softer visions,——gentler vibrations, stole sweetly in upon his slumbers;—the trumpet of war fell out of his hands:——He took up the lute, sweet instrument! of all others the most delicate! the most difficult!——how wilt thou touch it, my dear uncle Toby?

## CHAP. XXXVI.

NOW, because I have once or twice said, in my inconsiderate way of talking, that I was confident the following memoirs of my uncle Toby's courtship of widow Wadman, whenever I got time to write them, would turn out one of the most complete systems, both of the elementary and practical part of love and love-making, that ever was addressed to the world——are you to imagine from thence that I shall set out with a description of what love is? whether part God and part devil, as Plotinus will have it——

—Or, by a more critical equation, and supposing the whole of love to be as ten—to determine, with Ficinus, "How many parts of it—the one, and how many the other;"—or whether it is all of it one great devil, from head to tail, as Plato has taken upon him to pronounce; concerning which conceit of his, I shall not offer my opinion:——But my opinion of Plato is this, That he appears, from this instance, to have been a man of much the same temper and way of reasoning with doctor Baynard, who being a great enemy to blisters, as imagining that half a dozen of 'em on at once, would draw a man as surely to his grave, as a hearse and six——rashly concluded, that the devil himself was nothing in the world, but one great bouncing cantharidis—

I have nothing to say to people who allow themselves this monstrous liberty in arguing, but what Nazianzen cried out, (that is polemically) to Philagrius—

"*Euge*!" O rare! 'tis fine reasoning, sir, indeed!—*Oti philosopheis en Parthesi*—and most nobly do you aim at truth, when you philosophize about it in your moods and passions."

Nor is it to be imagined, for the same reasons, I should stop to inquire, whether Love is a disease ——or embroil myself with Rhasis and Dioscorides, whether the seat of it is in the brain or liver ——because this would lead me on to an examination of the two very opposite manners in which patients have been treated—the one, of Aætius, who always began with a cooling glister of hempseed and bruised cucumbers——and followed on with thin potations of water lilies and purslane—to which he added a pinch of snuff, of the herb hanea——and, where Aætius durst venture it—his topaz ring.

——The other, that of Gordonius, who (in his cap. 15. de Amore) directs they should be thrashed "ad putorem usque,"——till they stink again.

These are disquisitions, which my father, who had laid in a great stock of knowledge of this kind, will be very busy with, in the progress of my uncle Toby's affairs: I must anticipate thus much, that from his theories of love, (with which by the way, he contrived to crucify my uncle Toby's mind, almost as much as his amours themselves)—he took a single step into practice;—— and, by means of a camphorated cerecloth, which he found means to impose upon the taylor for

buckram, whilst he was making my uncle Toby a new pair of breeches, he produced Gordonius's effect upon my uncle Toby, without the disgrace.

What changes this produced, will be read in its proper place: All that is needful to be added to the anecdote, is this,—That whatever effect it had upon my uncle Toby,——it had a vile effect upon the house;—and if my uncle Toby had not smoked it down as he did, it might have had a vile effect upon my father too.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

——'TWILL come out of itself by and by ——All that I contend for is, that I am not obliged to set out with a definition of what love is; and so long as I can go on with my story intelligibly, with the help of the word itself, without any other idea to it, than what I have in common with the rest of the world, why should I differ from it a moment before the time?—When I can get on no farther,—and find myself entangled on all sides of this mystic labyrinth,—my opinion will then come in, in course,—and lead me out.

At present, I hope I shall be sufficiently understood, in telling the reader, my uncle Toby fell in love:

Not that the phrase is at all to my liking: For, to say a man is fallen in love,—or that he is deeply in love,—or up to the ears in love,—and sometimes even over head and ears in it,—carries an

idiomatical kind of implication, that love is below a man:——This is recurring again to Plato's opinion, which, with all his divinityship—I hold to be damnable and heretical:——and so much for that.

Let love, therefore, be what it will,—my uncle Toby fell into it.

——And possibly, gentle reader, with such a temptation—so wouldst thou: For never did thy eyes behold, or thy concupiscence covet, any thing in this world more concupiscible than Widow Wadman.

## CHAP. XXXVIII.

TO conceive this right—call for pen and ink—here's paper ready to your hand.——Sit down, sir, paint her to your own mind——as like your mistress as your conscience will let you—'tis all one to me—please but your own fancy in it.

——Was ever any thing in nature so sweet! ——so exquisite!

——Then, dear sir, how could my uncle Toby resist it?

Thrice happy book! thou wilt have one page, at least, within thy covers, which Malice will not blacken, and which Ignorance cannot misrepresent.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

AS Susannah was informed, by an express from Mrs. Bridget, of my uncle Toby's falling in love with her mistress, fifteen days before it happened,——the contents of which express, Susannah communicated to my mother the next day,——it has just given me an opportunity of entering upon my uncle Toby's amours a fortnight before their existence.

——I have an article of news to tell you, Mr. Shandy, quoth my mother, which will surprize you greatly.——

Now my father was then holding one of his second beds of justice, and was musing within himself about the hardships of matrimony, as my mother broke silence.——

"——My brother Toby, quoth she, is going to "be married to Mrs. Wadman."

——Then he will never, quoth my father, be *able to lie* diagonally in his bed again as long as *he lives*.

It was a consuming vexation to my father, that my mother never asked the meaning of a thing she did not understand.

—That she is not a woman of science, my father would say, is her misfortune———but she might ask a question.

My mother never did——In short, she went out of the world at last, without knowing whether it turned round, or stood still.———My father had officiously told her above a thousand times which way it was,—but she always forgot.

For these reasons, a discourse seldom went on much farther betwixt them, than a proposition,—a reply, and a rejoinder; at the end of which, it generally took breath for a few minutes, (as in the affair of the breeches,) and then went on again.

If he marries, 'twill be the worse for us,—quoth my mother.

Not a cherry-stone, said my father;———he may as well batter away his means upon that, as any thing else.

—To be sure, said my mother: So here ended the proposition,—the reply,——and the rejoinder,——I told you of.

It will be some amusement to him, too—said my father.

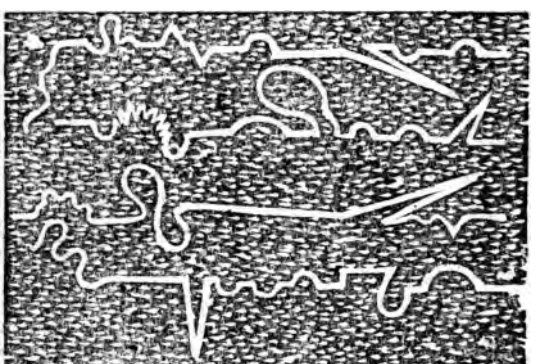
A very great one, answered my mother, if he should have children———

—Lord have mercy upon me,—said my father to himself—* * * *

## CHAP. XL.

I AM now beginning to get fairly into my work; and, by the help of a vegetable diet, with a few of the cold seeds, I make no doubt but I shall be able to go on with my uncle Toby's story, and my own, in a tolerable straight line.

Now,



*Inv. T. S.* *Scul. T. S.*

These were the four lines I moved in through my first, second, third, and fourth volumes——

In the fifth volume, I have been very good,—the precise line I have described in it being thus:

By which it appears, that, except at the curve marked A, where I took a trip to Navarre—— and the indented curve B, which is the short airing when I was there with the lady Baussiere and her page—I have not taken the least frisk of a digression, till John de la Casse's devils led me the round you see marked D——for as for C C C C C they are nothing but parentheses, and the common ins and outs incident to the lives of the greatest ministers of state; and when compared with what men have done——or with my own transgressions at the letters ABD——they vanish into nothing.

In this last volume, I have done better still—for, from the end of Le Fevre's episode, to the beginning of my uncle Toby's campaigns——I have scarce stepped a yard out of my way.

If I mend at this rate, it is not impossible—— by the good leave of his grace of Benevento's devils——but I may arrive hereafter at the excellency of going even on thus:

---

which line, drawn as straight as I could draw it, by a writing-master's ruler, (borrowed for that purpose), turning neither to the right hand or to the left——

——This right line——the path way for Christians to walk in! say divines——

———The emblem of moral rectitude! says Cicero——

——The best line! say cabbage-planters—— is the shortest line, says Archimedes, which can *be drawn from* one given point to another.——

O ! I wish your ladyships would lay this matter to heart in your next birth-day suits !

What a journey !

Pray, can you tell me——that is, without anger, before I write my chapter upon straight lines ——by what mistake——who told them so—— or how it has come to pass, that your men of wit and genius have all along confounded this line with the line of gravitation ?

END OF THE SIXTH BOOK.

THE

# LIFE AND OPINIONS

OF

# TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENT.

## CHAP. I.

NO——I think I said I would write two volumes every year, provided the vile cough which then tormented me, and, which, to this hour I dread worse than the devil, would but give me leave.....and in another place.....(but where, I can't recollect now) speaking of my book as a machine, and laying my pen and ruler down cross-ways upon the table, in order to gain the greater credit to it.....I swore it should be kept a-going at that rate these forty years, if it pleased but the Fountain of life to bless me so long with health and good spirits.

Now, as for my spirits, little have I to lay to their charge.....nay, so very little (unless the mounting me upon a long stick, and playing the

fool with me nineteen hours out of the twenty-four, be accusations) that, on the contrary, I have much—much to thank 'em for ; cheerily have ye made me tread the path of life with all the burdens of it (except its cares) upon my back ; in no one moment of my existence, that I remember, have ye once deserted me, or tinged the objects which came in my way, either with sable, or with a sickly green ; in dangers ye gilded my horizon with hope, and which DEATH himself knocked at my door—ye bid him come again ; and in so gay a tone of careless indifference did ye do it, that he doubted of his commission.

—"There must certainly be some mistake in "this matter," quoth he.

Now there is nothing in this world I abominate worse, than to be interrupted in a story.....and I was that moment telling Eugenius a most tawdry one in my way, of a nun who fancied herself a shell-fish, and of a monk damn'd for eating a muscle, and was showing him the grounds and justice of the procedure.....

—"Did ever so grave a personage get into so "vile a scrape ?" quoth Death. Thou hast had a narrow escape, Tristram, said Eugenius, taking hold of my hand as I finished my story.

But there is no living, Eugenius, replied I, at this rate ; for as this son of a whore has found out my lodgings.

—You call him rightly, said Eugenius,—for by sin, we are told he enter'd the world.....I care not which way he enter'd, quoth I, provided he be not in such a hurry to take me out with him.....for I have forty volumes to write, and

forty thousand things to say and do, which nobody in the world will say and do for me, except thyself; and as thou see'st he has got me by the throat, (for Eugenius could scarce hear me speak across the table) and that I am no match for him in the open field, had I not better, whilst these few scatter'd spirits remain, and these two spider legs of mine (holding up one of them to him) are able to support me—had I not better, Eugenius, fly for my life? 'Tis my advice, my dear Tristram, said Eugenius——Then, by heaven! I will lead him a dance he little thinks of—for I will gallop, quoth I, without looking once behind me, to the banks of the Garonne; and if I hear him clattering at my heels——I'll scamper away to mount Vesuvius——from thence to Joppa, and from Joppa to the world's end, where, if he follows me, I pray God he may break his neck.—

—He runs more risk there, said Eugenius, than thou.

Eugenius's wit and affection brought blood into the cheek, from whence it has been some months banish'd——'twas a vile moment to bid adieu in; he led me to my chaise——Allons! said I; the post-boy gave a crack with his whip——off I went like a cannon, and in half a dozen bounds got into Dover,

## CHAP. II.

NOW, hang it, quoth I, as I look'd towards the French coast.....a man should know something of his own country too, before he goes

abroad—and I never gave a peep into Rochester church, or took notice of the dock of Chatham, or visited St. Thomas at Canterbury, tho' they all three lay in my way.—

—But mine, indeed, is a particular case.....

So, without arguing the matter farther, with Thomas O'Becket, or any one else—I skipp'd into the boat, and in five minutes we got under sail, and scudded away like the wind.

Pray captain, quoth I, as I was going down into the cabin, is a man never overtaken by Death in this passage ?

Why, there is not time for a man to be sick in it, replied he——What a cursed liar ! for I am sick as a horse, quoth I, already————what a brain !———upside down !——hey dey ! the cells are broke loose one into another ; and the blood, and the lymph, and the nervous juices, with the fix'd and volatile salts, are all jumbled into one mass——good G—! every thing turns round in it like a thousand whirlpools——I'd give a shilling to know if I shan't write the clearer for it———

Sick ! sick ! sick ! sick !

—When shall we get to land, captain ?——they have hearts like stones———O I am deadly sick !——reach me that thing, boy———'tis the most discomfiting sickness———I wish I was at the bottom———Madam ! how is it with you ?——Undone ! undone ! un—O ! undone ! Sir——What, the first time ? ————No, 'tis the second, third, sixth, tenth time, sir——hey dey —what a trampling over head !————hollo ! cabin-boy ! what's the matter ?———

The wind chopp'd about! s'Death?——then I shall meet him full in the face.

What luck!—'tis chopp'd about again, master—O the devil chop it——

Captain, quoth she, for heaven's sake, let us get ashore.

## CHAP. III.

IT is a great inconvenience to a man in haste, that there are three distinct roads between Calais and Paris, in behalf of which, there is so much to be said by the several deputies from the towns which lie along them, that half a day is easily lost in settling which you'll take.

First, the road by Lisle and Arras, which is the most about——but most interesting and instructing.

The second, that by Amiens, which you may go, if you would see Chantilly——

And that by Beauvais, which you may go, if you will.

For this reason, a great many choose to go by Beauvais.

## CHAP. IV.

"NOW, before I quit Calais," a travel-writer would say, "it would not be amiss to give "some account of it."

Now, I think it very much amiss.....that a man cannot go quietly thro' a town, and let it alone, when it does not meddle with him, but that he must be turning about and drawing his pen at every kennel he crosses over, merely, o'my conscience, for the sake of drawing; because, if we may judge from what has been wrote of these things, by all who have wrote and gallop'd.....or who have gallop'd and wrote, which is a different way still; or, who, for more expedition than the rest, have wrote galloping, which is the way I do at present.....from the great Addison, who did it with his satchel of school books hanging at his a....., and galling his beast's crupper at every stroke....there's not a galloper of us all who might not have gone on ambling quietly in his own ground, (in case he had any) and have wrote all he had to write, dry shod, as well as not.

For my own part, as heaven is my judge, and to which I shall ever make my last appeal.....I know no more of Calais, (except the little my barber told me of it, as he was whetting his razor) than I do this moment of Grand Cairo; for it was dusky in the evening when I landed, and dark as pitch in the morning when I set out; and yet, by merely knowing what is what, and by drawing this from that in one part of the town, and by spelling and putting this and that together in another.....I would lay any travelling odds, that I this moment write a chapter upon Calais as long as my arm; and with so distinct and satisfactory a detail of every item, which is worth a stranger's curiosity in the town.....that you would take me for the town-clerk of Calais itself. .....And where, sir, would be the wonder? was not Democritus, who laughed ten times more than I.....town-clerk of Abdera? and was not (I forget his name) who had more discretion than

us both, town-clerk of Ephesus?.....It should be penn'd, moreover, sir, with so much knowledge, and good sense, and truth, and precision.....

.....Nay.....if you don't believe me, you may read the chapter for your pains.

## CHAP. V.

CALAIS, Calatium, Calusium, Calesium..... This town, if we may trust its archives, the authority of which I see no reason to call in question in this place.....was once no more than a small village belonging to one of the first Counts de Guinas; and, as it boasts at present of no less than fourteen thousand inhabitants, exclusive of four hundred and twenty distinct families in the basse ville, or suburbs.....it must have grown up by little and little, I suppose, to its present size.

Tho' there are four convents, there is but one parochial church in the whole town; I had not an opportunity of taking its exact dimensions, but it is pretty easy to make a tolerable conjecture of 'em.....for, as there are fourteen thousand inhabitants in the town, if the church holds them all, it must be considerably large.....and if it will not.....'tis a very great pity they have not another.....it is built in form of a cross, and dedicated to the Virgin Mary; the steeple, which has a spire to it, is placed in the middle of the church and stands upon four pillars, elegant and light enough, but sufficiently strong at the same time.....it is decorated with eleven altars, most of which are rather fine than beautiful. The great altar is a master-piece in its kind; 'tis of white marble, and, as I was told, near sixty feet

high.....had it been much higher, it had been as high as Mount Calvary itself.....therefore, I suppose it must be high enough in all conscience.

There was nothing struck me more than the square ; tho' I cannot say 'tis either well paved or well built ; but 'tis in the heart of the town ; and most of the streets, especially those in that quarter, all terminate in it; could there have been a fountain in all Calais, which it seems there cannot, as such an object would have been a great ornament, it is not to be doubted, but that the inhabitants would have had it in the very centre of this square,.....not that it is properly a square,.....because 'tis forty feet longer from east to west, than from north to south ; so that the French, in general, have more reason on their side in calling them Places, than Squares, which, strictly speaking, to be sure, they are not.

The town-house seems to be but a sorry building, and not to be kept in the best repair ; otherwise it had been a second great ornament to this place ; it answers, however, its distinction, and serves very well for the reception of the magistrates, who assemble in it from time to time ; so that 'tis presumable, justice is regularly distributed.

I had heard much of it, but there is nothing at all curious in the Courgain ; 'tis a distinct quarter of the town, inhabited solely by sailors and fishermen ;....it consists of a number of small streets, neatly built, and mostly of brick ; 'tis extremely populous ; but as that may be accounted for, from the principles of their diet,.....there is nothing curious in that neither.....A traveller may see it, to satisfy himself.....He must not omit, however, taking notice of La Tour deGuet,

upon any account; 'tis so called from its particular destination, because in war it serves to discover and give notice of the enemies which approach the place, either by sea or land;....but 'tis monstrous high, and catches the eye so continually, you cannot avoid taking notice of it, if you would.

It was a singular disappointment to me, that I could not have permission to take an exact survey of the fortifications, which are the strongest in the world, and which, from first to last, that is, from the time they were set about by Philip of France, Count of Boulogne, to the present war, wherein many reparations were made, have cost (as I learned afterwards from an engineer in Gascony)....above a hundred millions of livers. It is very remarkable, that at the Tete de Gravelenes, and where the town is naturally the weakest, they have expended the most money; so that the outworks stretch a great way into the champaign, and,consequently,occupy a large tract of ground..... However, after all that is said and done, it must be acknowledged, that Calais was never, upon any account, so considerable from itself, as from its situation, and that easy entrance which, it gave our ancestors upon all occasions, into France: It was not without its inconveniences also; being no less troublesome to the English in those times, than Dunkirk has been to us, in ours; so that it was deservedly looked upon as the key to both kingdoms; which, no doubt, is the reason that there have arisen so many contentions who should keep it: Of these, the siege of Calais, or rather the blockade, (for it was shut up both by land and sea,) was the most memorable, as it withstood the efforts of Edward the Third a whole year, and was not terminated at last but by famine and extreme misery; the gallantry

of Eustace de St. Pierre, who first offered himself a victim for his fellow-citizens, has rank'd his name with heroes. As it will not take up above fifty pages, it would be injustice to the reader, not to give him a minute account of that romantic transaction, as well as of the siege itself, in Rapin's own words.

## CHAP. VI.

——BUT courage! gentle reader!——I scorn it——'tis enough to have thee in my power—but, to make use of the advantage which the fortune of the pen has now gained over thee, would be too much—No—! by that all-powerful fire which warms the visionary brain, and lights the spirits through unwordly tracts! ere I would force a helpless creature upon this hard service, and make thee pay, poor soul! for fifty pages which I have no right to sell thee,—naked as I am, I would browse upon the mountains, and smile that the north wind brought me neither my tent or my supper.

—So put on, my brave boy! and make the best of thy way to Boulogne.

## CHAP. VII.

——BOULOGNE!——hah!——so we are all got together——debtors and sinners before heaven; a jolly set of us—but I can't stay and quaff it off with you—I'm pursued myself like a hundred devils, and shall be overtaken before I

can well change horses :——For heaven's sake, make haste——'Tis for high treason, quoth a very little man, whispering as low as he could to a very tall man that stood next him—Or else for murder : Quoth the tall man—Well thrown, Size-Ace ! quoth I. No ; quoth a third, the gentleman has been committing—

Ah ! ma chere fille ! said I, as she tripped by from her matins—you look as rosy as the morning (for the sun was rising, and it made the compliment the more gracious)—No ; it can't be that, quoth a fourth—(she made a curt'sy to me.——I kiss'd my hand) 'tis debt continued he : 'Tis certainly for debt, quoth a fifth ; I would not pay that gentleman's debts, quoth Ace, for a thousand pounds : Nor would I, quoth Size, for six times the sum.—Well thrown, Size Ace, again ! quoth I :—but I have no debt but the debt of NATURE, and I want but patience of her, and I will pay her every farthing I owe her.—How can you be so hard-hearted, MADAM, to arrest a poor traveller going along, without molestation to any one, upon his lawful occasions ? do stop that death-looking, long-striding scoundrel of a scare-sinner, who is posting after me——he never would have followed me but for you——if it be but for a stage or two, just to give me the start of him, I beseech you, madam,—do dear lady—

——Now, in troth, 'tis a great pity, quoth mine Irish host, that all this good courtship should be lost ; for the young gentlewoman has been after going out of hearing of it all along—

—Simpleton ! quoth I.

—So you have nothing else in Boulogne worth seeing ?

By Jasus ! there is the finest SEMINARY for the HUMANITIES—

*There cannot* be a finer, quoth I.

## CHAP. VIII.

WHEN the precipitancy of a man's wishes hurries on his ideas ninety times faster than the vehicle he rides in——wo be to truth! and wo be to the vehicle and its tackling (let 'em be made of what stuff you will) upon which he breathes forth the disappointment of his soul!—

As I never give general characters either of men or things in choler, "the most haste the worst speed," was all the reflection I made upon the affair the first time it happened;—the second, third, fourth, and fifth time, I confined it respectively to those times, and accordingly blamed only the second, third, fourth and fifth post boy for it, without carrying my reflections farther; but the event continuing to befal me from the fifth to the sixth, seventh, eight, ninth, and tenth time, and without one exception, I then could not avoid making a national reflection of it, which I do in these words:

That something is always wrong in a French post-chaise upon first setting out.

Or the proposition may stand thus:

A French postillion has always to alight before he has got three hundred yards out of town.

What's wrong now?——Diable——a rope's broke!—a knot has slipt!—a staple's drawn!—a bolt's to whittle!—a tag, a rag, a jag, a strap, a buckle, or a buckle's tongue, want altering.——

Now, true as all this is, I never think myself empower'd to excommunicate thereupon either the post-chaise or its driver——nor do I take it into my head to swear by the living G—, I would rather go a-foot ten thousand times——or that I will be damn'd if ever I get into another—but I take the matter cooly before me, and consider that some tag, or rag, or jag, or bolt, or buckle, or buckle's tongue, will ever be a wanting, or want altering, travel where I will—so I never chaff, but take the good and the bad as they fall in my road, and get on.——Do so, my lad! said I; he had lost five minutes already, in alighting in order to get a luncheon of black bread which he had cramm'd into the chaise pocket, and was remounted and going leisurely on, to relish it the better—Get on, my lad, said I, briskly———but in the most pursuasive tone imaginable, for I jingled a four and twenty sous piece against the glass, taking care to hold the flat side towards him, as he look'd back: The dog grinn'd intelligence from his right ear to his left, and behind his sooty muzzle discover'd such a pearly row of teeth, that Sovereignty would have pawn'd her jewels for them.——

Just Heaven! { What masticators!—— / What bread!——

and so as he finish'd the last mouthful of it, we enter'd the town of Montreuil.

## CHAP. IX.

THERE is not a town in all France, which, in my opinion, looks better in the map, than MONTREUIL;—I own it does not look so well in the book of post-roads; but when you come to see it—to be sure it looks most pitifully.

There is one thing however in it at present very handsome; and that is the innkeeper's daughter: She has been eight months at Amiens, and six at Paris, in going thro' her classes; so knits, and sews and dances, and does the little coquetries very well.—

—A slut in running them over within these five minutes that I have stood looking at her, she has let fall at least a dozen loops in a white thread stocking—Yes, yes,—I see you, cunning gipsy! —'tis long and taper—you need not pin it to your knee—and that 'tis your own—and fits you exactly———

———That Nature should have told this creature a word about a statue's thumb!———

—But as this sample is worth all their thumbs —besides I have her thumbs and fingers in at the bargain if they can be any guide to me,—and as Janatone withal (for that is her name) stands so well for a drawing———may I never draw more, or rather, may I draw like a draught-horse, by main strength all the days of my life,—if I do not draw her in all her proportions, and with as determin'd a pencil, as if I had her in the wettest drapery—

—But your worships choose rather that I give you the length, breadth, and perpendicular height of the great parish church, or a drawing of the fascade of the Abbey of Saint Aostreberte which has been transported from Artois hither—every thing is just, I suppose, as the masons and carpenters left them,—and if the belief in Christ continues so long, will be so these fifty years to come —so your worships and reverences may all measure them at your leisures——but he who measures thee, Janatone, must do it now—thou

carriest the principles of change within thy frame; and, considering the chances of a transitory life, I would not answer for thee a moment; and, ere twice twelvemonth are pass'd and gone, thou mayest grow out like a pumpkin, and lose thy shapes—or, thou mayest go off like a flower, and lose thy beauty—nay, thou mayest go off like a hussy———and lose thyself.—I would not answer for my aunt Dinah, was she alive—'faith scarce for her picture—were it but painted by Reynolds—

——But if I go on with my drawing, after naming that son of Apollo, I'll be shot——

So you must e'en be content with the original; which, if the evening is fine in passing through Montreuil, you will see at your chaise-door, as you change horses: But, unless you have as bad a reason for haste as I have—you had better stop:

She has a little of the devotee: But that, sir, is a terce to a nine in your favor———

L—— help me! I could not count a single point; so had been piqued and repiqued, and capotted to the devil.

## CHAP. X.

ALL which being considered, and that Death moreover might be much nearer me than I imagined——I wish I was at Abbeville, quoth I, were it only to see how they card and spin——so off we set.

*de Montreuil a Nampont - poste et demi
de Nampont a Bernay - - - poste
de Bernay a Nouvion - - - poste
de Nouvion a ABBEVILLE poste

—but the carders and spinners were all gone bed.

## CHAP. XI.

WHAT a vast advantage is travelling! o it heats one; but there is a remedy that, which you may pick out of the next chapt

## CHAP. XII.

WAS I in a condition to stipulate with Dea as I am this moment with my apotheca how and where I will take his glister—I shou certainly declare against submitting to it befc my friends; and therefore, I never seriously thi upon the mode and manner of this great catas phe, which generally takes up and torments r thoughts as much as the catastrophe itself, bu constantly draw the curtain across it with t wish, that the Disposer of all things may so ord it, that it happen not to me in my own house— but rather in some decent inn———At home,— know it,———the concern of my friends, and t last services of wiping my brows and smoothi my pillow, which the quivering hand of pale affe tion shall pay me,—will so crucify my soul, th I shall die of a distemper which my physician not aware of: But in an inn, the few cold offic

*Vide Book of French post-roads, p. 36, edition of 17

I wanted, would be purchased with a few guineas, and paid me with an undisturbed but punctual attention—but mark,—This inn should not be the inn at Abbeville—if there was not another inn in the universe, I would strike that inn out of the capitulation :—So——

Let the horses be in the chaise exactly by four in the morning——Yes, by four, sir,—or, by Genevieve! I'll raise a clatter in the house, shall wake the dead.

## CHAP. XIII.

"MAKE them like unto a wheel," is a bitter sarcasm, as all learned know, against the grand tour, and that restless spirit for making it, which David prophetically foresaw would haunt the children of men in latter days; and therefore, as thinketh the great bishop Hall, 'tis one of the severest imprecations which David ever utter'd against the enemies of the Lord——and as if he had said, "I wish them no worse luck than always to be rolling about."——So much motion, continues he, (for he was very corpulent)——is so much unquietness; and so much of rest by the same analogy is so much of heaven.

Now, I (being very thin) think differently; and that so much of motion is so much of life, and so much of joy—and that to stand still, or get on but slowly, is death and the devil.

Hollo! Ho!—the whole world's asleep!——bring out the horses—grease the wheels—tie on

the mail—and drive a nail into that moulding—I'll not lose a moment.———

Now, the wheel we are talking of, and whereinto (but not whereonto, for that would make an Ixion's wheel of it) he cursesth his enemies, according to the bishop's habit of body, should certainly be a post-chaise wheel, whether they were set up in Palestine at that time or not——and my wheel, for the contrary reasons, must as certainly be a cart wheel groaning round its revolution once in an age; and of which sort, were I to turn commentator, I should make no scruple to affirm, they had great store in that hilly country.

I love the Pythagoreans (much more than ever I dare tell my dear Jenny) for their "*Chorismon "apo tou somatos, eis'to kaloos philosophein*"—[their] "*getting out of the body, in order to think well.*" No man thinks right whilst he is in it; blinded as he must be, with his congenial humors, and drawn differently aside, as the bishop and myself have been, with too lax or too tense a fibre—— REASON is, half of it, SENSE; and the measure of heaven itself is but the measure of our present appetites and concoctions——

——But which of the two, in the present case, do you think to be mostly in the wrong?

You certainly, quoth she, to disturb a whole family so early.

## CHAP. XIV.

——BUT she did not know I was under a vow not to shave by beard till I got to Paris, ——yet I hate to make mysteries of nothing;——

'tis the cold cautiousness of one of those little souls from which *Lessias (lib.* 13. *de moribus divinis, cap.* 24.*)* hath made his estimate, wherein he setteth forth, That one Dutch mile, cubically multiplied, will allow room enough and to spare, for eight hundred thousand millions, which he supposes to be as great a number of souls (counting from the fall of Adam) as can possibly be damn'd to the end of the world.

From what he has made this second estimate—unless from the parental goodness of God——I don't know——I am much more at a loss what could be in Franciscus Ribbera's head, who pretends that no less a space than one of two hundred Italian miles, multiplied into itself, will be sufficient to hold the like number—he certainly must have gone upon some of the old Roman souls, of which he had read, without reflecting how much, by a gradual and most tabid decline, in a course of eighteen hundred years, they must unavoidably, have shrunk, so as to have come, when he wrote, almost to nothing.

In Lessias's time, who seems the cooler man, they were as little as can be imagined.————

—We find them less now.————

And next winter we shall find them less again; so that if we go on from little to less, and from less to nothing, I hesitate not one moment to affirm, that, in half a century, at this rate, we shall have no souls at all; which being the period, beyond which I doubt likewise of the existence of the Christian faith, 'twill be one advantage that both of them will be exactly worn out together.

Blessed Jupiter! and blessed every other heathen god and goddess! for now ye will all come into play again, and with Priapus at your tails—what jovial times!—but where am I? and into what a delicious riot of things am I rushing? I—I who must be cut short in the midst of my days, and taste no more of 'em than what I borrow from my imagination—peace to thee, generous soul! and let me go on.

## CHAP. XV.

——"SO hating, I say, to make mysteries of nothing"——I intrusted it with the post-boy, as soon as ever I got off the stones; he gave a crack with his whip to balance the compliment; and with the thill-horse trotting, and a sort of an up and down of the other, we danced it along to Ailly au Clochers, famed in days of yore for the finest chimes in the world; but we danced through it without music——the chimes being greatly out of order——(as in truth they were thro' all France.)

And so making all possible speed, from Ailly au Clochers, I got to Hixcourt,—
from Hixcourt I got to Pequignay, and from Pequignay, I got to AMIENS,—
concerning which town I have nothing to inform you, but what I have informed you once before ——and that was——that Janatone went there to school.

## CHAP. XVI.

IN the whole catalogue of those whiffling vexations, which come puffing across a man's canvass, there is not one of a more teazing and tormenting nature, than this particular one which I am going to describe——and for which, (unless you travel with an avance-courier, which numbers do in order to prevent it,——there is no help; and it is this;—

That be you in never so kindly a propensity to sleep——tho' you are passing perhaps thro' the finest country——upon the best roads,——and in the easiest carriage for doing it in the world——nay, were you sure you could sleep fifty miles straight forwards, without once opening your eyes ——nay, what is more, were you as demonstratively satisfied as you can be of any truth in Euclid, that you should upon all accounts be full as well asleep as awake——nay, perhaps, better——yet the incessant returns of paying for the horses at every stage——with the necessity thereupon of putting your hand into your pocket, and counting out from thence, three livres fifteen sous (sous by sous) puts an end to so much of the project, that you cannot execute above six miles of it (or supposing it is a post and a half, that is but nine) ——were it to save your soul from destruction.

——I'll be even with 'em, quoth I, for I'll put the precise sum into a piece of paper, and hold it ready in my hand all the way: "Now, I shall have nothing to do," said I (composing myself to rest) "but to drop this gently into the post-boy's

hat, and not say a word."——Then there wants two sous more to drink—or there is a twelve sous piece of Louis XIV. which will not pass——or a livre and some odd liards to be brought over from the last stage, which Monsieur had forgot; which altercations (as a man cannot dispute very well asleep) rouse him: Still is sweet sleep retrievable; and still might the flesh weigh down the spirit, and recover itself of these blows——but then, by heaven! you have paid but for a single post——whereas 'tis a post and a half; and this obliges you to pull out your book of post-roads, the print of which is so very small, it forces you to open your eyes, whether you will or no: Then monsieur le Cure offers you a pinch of snuff—or a poor soldier shows you his leg——or a shaveling his box——or the priestesse of the cistern will water your wheels——they do not want it——but she swears by her priesthood (throwing it back) that they do:——Then you have all these points to argue or consider over in your mind; in doing of which, the rational powers get so thoroughly awakened——you may get 'em to sleep again as you can.

It was entirely owing to one of these misfortunes, or I had pass'd clean by the stables of Chantilly——

——But the postillion first affirming, and then persisting in it to my face, that there was no mark upon the two sous piece, I opened my eyes to be convinced——and seeing the mark upon it, as plain as my nose——I leap'd out of the chaise in a passion, and so saw every thing at Chantilly in spite.——I tried it but for three posts and an half, but believe 'tis the best principle in the world to travel speedily upon; for as few objects look very inviting in that mood——you have little or

nothing to stop you; by which means it was that I pass'd thro' St. Dennis, without turning my head so much as on the side towards the Abbey———

———Richness of their treasury! stuff and nonsense!——bating their jewels, which are all false, I would not give three sous for any one thing in it, but Jaidas's lantern———nor for that either, only as it grows dark, it might be of use.——

## CHAP. XVII.

CRACK, crack—crack, crack—crack, crack ——so, this is Paris! quoth I, (continuing in the same mood)————and this is Paris!—humph!——Paris! cried I, repeating the name the third time——

The first, the finest, the most brilliant—

—The streets however are nasty;

But it looks, I suppose better than it smells—crack, crack——crack, crack——What a fuss thou makest!—as if it concern'd the good people to be informed, That a man with a pale face, and clad in black, had the honor to be driven into Paris at nine o'clock at night, by a postillion in a tawny yellow jerkin turned up with red calamanco—crack, crack—crack, crack——crack, crack ——I wish thy whip————

—But 'tis the spirit of thy nation; so crack—crack on.

Ha !—and no one gives the wall !—but in the SCHOOL of URBANITY herself, if the walls are besh-t—how can you do otherwise ?

And prithee when do they light the lamps ? What ?—never in the summer months !—Ho ! 'tis the time of sallads.—O rare ! sallad and soup ——soup and sallad—sallad and soup, encore.—

—'Tis too much for sinners.

Now I cannot bear the barbarity of it ; how can that unconscionable coachman talk so much bawdy to that lean horse ? don't you see, friend, the streets are so villanously narrow, that there is not room in all Paris to turn a wheel-barrow ? In the grandest city in the whole world, it would not have been amiss, if they had been left a thought wider ; nay, were it only so much in every single street, as that a man might know (was it only for satisfaction) on which side of it he was walking.

One—two—three—four—five—six—seven—eight—nine—ten————Ten cook shops ! and twice the number of barbers ! and all within three minutes driving ! one would think that all the cooks in the world, on some great merry-meeting with the barbers, by joint consent had said—Come, let us all go live at Paris : The French love good eating——they are all gourmands—we shall rank high ; if their god is their belly—their cooks must be gentlemen ; and forasmuch as the periwig maketh the man, and the periwig maker maketh the periwig—ergo, would the barbers say, we shall rank higher still——we shall be above you all——we shall be * Capitouls at least —pardi ! we shall all wear swords————

* *Chief* Magistrate in Toulouse, &c. &c. &c.

And so, one would swear, (that is, by candle-light,—but there is no depending upon it) they continue to do, to this day.

## CHAP. XVIII.

THE French are certainly misunderstood :— But whether the fault is theirs, in not sufficiently explaining themselves, or speaking with that exact limitation and precision which one would expect on a point of such importance, and which morever is so likely to be contested by us ——or whether the fault may not be altogether on our side, in not understanding their language always so critically, as to know "what they would be at"——I shall not decide ; but 'tis evident to me, when they affirm, "That they who have seen Paris, have seen every thing," they must mean to speak of those who have seen it by day-light.

As for candle-light——I give it up——I have said before, there was no depending upon it—— and I repeat it again ; but not because the lights and shades are too sharp—or the tints confounded —or that there is neither beauty or keeping, &c. . . . . for that's not truth——but it is an uncertain light in this respect, that in all the five hundred grand hotels, which they number up to you in Paris——and the five hundred good things, at a modest computation (for 'tis only allowing one good thing to a hotel) which by candle-light are best to be seen, felt, heard and understood (which, by the bye, is a quotation from Lilly)—the devil a one of us out of fifty, can get our heads fairly thrust in amongst them.

This is no part of the French computation ; *'Tis simply this :*

That by the last survey taken in the year one thousand seven hundred and sixteen, since which time there have been considerable augmentations, Paris doth contain nine hundred streets ; viz.

In the quarter called the City, there are fifty-three streets.

In St. James of the Shambles, fifty-five streets.

In St. Oportune, thirty-four streets.

In the quarter of the Louvre, twenty-five streets.

In the Palace Royal, or St. Honorius, forty-nine Streets.

In Mount Martyr, forty-one streets.

In St. Eustace, twenty-nine streets.

In the Halles, twenty-seven streets.

In St. Dennis, fifty-five streets.

In St. Martin, fifty-four streets.

In St. Paul, or the Mortellerie, twenty-seven streets.

The Greve, thirty-eight streets.

In St. Avoy, or the Verrerie, nineteen streets.

In the Marais, or the Temple, fifty-two streets.

In St. Antony's, sixty-eight streets.

In the Place Maubert, eighty-one streets.

In St. Bennet, sixty streets.

In St. Andrews d'Arcs, fifty-one streets.

In the quarter of the Luxembourgh, sixty-two streets.

And in that of St. German, fifty-five streets,—into any of which you may walk ; and that when you have seen them, with all that belongs to them, fairly by day-light—their gates, their bridges, their squares, their statues——and have crusaded it moreover thro' all their parish churches, by no means omitting St. Roche and Sulpice——and to crown all, have taken a walk to the four palaces, which you may see either with or without the statues and pictures, just as you choose——

———Then you will have seen———

[illegible]t, 'tis what no one needeth to tell you, for you [illegible] read it yourself upon the portico of the Lou[illegible] in these words,

*EARTH NO SUCH FOLKS!——NO FOLKS E'ER SUCH A TOWN
AS PARIS IS——SING, DERRY, DERRY, DOWN.

The French have a gay way of treating every thing that is great; and that is all can be said upon it.

## CHAP. XIX.

IN mentioning the word gay (as in the close of the last chapter) it puts one (i. e. an author) in mind of the word spleen—especially if he has any thing to say upon it: Not that by any analysis—or that from any table of interest or genealogy, there appears much more ground of alliance betwixt them, than betwixt light and darkness, or any two of the most unfriendly opposites in nature—only 'tis an undercraft of authors to keep up a good understanding amongst words, as politicians do amongst men——not knowing how near they may be under a necessity of placing them to each other—which point being now gain'd, and that I may place mine exactly to my mind, I write it down here——

### SPLEEN.

This, upon leaving Chantilly, I declared to be the best principle in the world to travel speedily upon; but I gave it only as a matter of opinion, I still continue in the same sentiments——only I had not then experience enough of its working,

* *Non Orbis gentem, non urbem gens habet ullam*
. . . . . *ulla parem.*

to add this,—that tho' you do get on at a tearing rate, yet you get on but uneasily to yourself at the same time; for which reason, I here quit it entirely, and for ever, and 'tis heartily at any one's service—it has spoiled me the digestion of a good supper, and brought on a bilious diarrhœa, which has brought me back again to my first principle on which I set out—and with which I shall now scamper it away to the banks of the Garonne——

—No;—I cannot stop a moment to give you the character of the people—their genius—their manners—their customs—their laws—their religion—their government—their manufactures—their commerce——their finances, with all the resources and hidden springs which sustain them—qualified as I may be, by spending three days and two nights amongst them, and during all that time, making these things the entire subject of my enquiries and reflections—

Still—still I must away—the roads are paved—the posts are short—the days are long—'tis no more than noon—I shall be at Fontainbleau before the king——

Was he going there? not that I know——

## CHAP. XX.

NOW I hate to hear a person, especially if he be a traveller, complain that we do not get on so fast in France as we do in England; whereas we get on much faster, consideratis considerandis; thereby always meaning, that if you weigh their vehicles with the mountains of baggage

which you lay both before and behind upon them ——and then consider their puny horses, with the very little they give them——'tis a wonder they get on at all: Their suffering is most unchristian, and 'tis evident thereupon to me, that a French post-horse would not know what in the world to do, was it not for the two words ****** and ******, in which their is as much sustenance, as if you gave him a peck of corn: Now, as these words cost nothing, I long from my soul to tell the reader what they are; but here is the question—— they must be told him plainly, and with the most distinct articulation, or it will answer no end—— and yet to do it in that plain way——tho' their reverences may laugh at it in their bed-chamber ——full well I wot they will abuse it in the parlor: For which cause, I have been volving and revolving in my fancy some time, but to no purpose, by what clean device or facete contrivance I might so modulate them, that whilst I satisfy that ear which the reader chooses to lend me———I might not dissatisfy the other which he keeps to himself.

——My ink burns my finger to try———and when I have——'twill have a worse consequence ——it will burn (I fear) my paper.

——No;—I dare not———

But if you wish to know how the abbess of Andouillets, and a novice of her convent got over the difficulty (only first wishing myself all imaginable success)——I'll tell you without the least scruple.

## CHAP. XXI.

THE abbess of Andouillets, which, if you look into the large set of provincial maps now publishing at Paris, you will find situated amongst the hills which divide Burgundy from Savoy, being in danger of an anchylosis or stiff joint (the sinovia of her knee becoming hard by long matins) and having tried every remedy——first, prayers and thanksgiving—then invocations to all the saints in heaven promiscuously——then particularly to every saint who had ever had a stiff leg before her—then touching it with all the reliques of the convent, principally with the thigh-bone of the man of Lystra, who had been impotent from his youth——then wrapping it up in her veil when she went to bed—then cross-wise her rosary—then bringing in to her aid the secular arm, and anointing it with oils and hot fat of animals—then treating it with emollient and resolving fomentations—then with poultices of marsh-mallows, mallows, bonus Henricus, white lilies and fenugreek—then taking the woods, I mean the smoke of 'em, holding her scapulary across her lap—then decoctions of wild chicory, water cresses, chervil, sweet cecily and cochlearia,—and nothing all this while answering, was prevailed on at last to try the hot baths of Bourbon—so having first obtain'd leave of the visitor general to take care of her existence—she ordered all to be got ready for her journey: A novice of the convent, of about seventeen, who had been troubled with a whitloe in her middle finger, by sticking it constantly into the abbess's cast poultices, &c.—had gained such an interest, that overlooking a sciatical old nun, who might have been set up for ever by the hot

baths of Bourbon, Margarita, the little novice, was elected as the companion of the journey.

An old calash, belonging to the abbess, lined with green frize, was ordered to be drawn out into the sun—the gardener of the convent being chosen muleteer, led out the two old mules to clip the hair from the rump-ends of their tails, whilst a couple of lay-sisters were busied, the one in darning the lining, and the other in sewing on shreds of yellow binding, which the teeth of time had unravelled——the under gardener dress'd the muleteer's hat in hot wine lees——and a taylor sat musically at it in a shed over-against the convent, in assorting four dozen of bells for the harness, whistling to each bell as he tied it on with a thong.....

.....The carpenter and the smith of Andouillets held a council of wheels; and, by seven the morning after, all look'd spruce, and was ready at the gate of the convent for the hot-baths of Bourbon —two rows of the unfortunate stood ready there an hour before.

.....The abbess of Andouillets, supported by Margarita the novice, advanced slowly to the calash, both clad in white, with their black rosaries hanging at their breasts.....

.....There was a simple solemnity in the contrast: They entered the calash; the nuns in the same uniform, sweet emblem of innocence, each occupied a window, and as the abbess and Margarita look'd up—each (the sciatical poor nun excepted)—each stream'd out the end of her veil in the air,—then kiss'd the lily hand which let it go: The good abbess and Margarita laid their hands saint-wise upon their breasts—look'd up to

heaven—then to them—and look'd "God bless you, dear sisters."

I declare I am interested in this story, and wish I had been there.

The gardener, who I shall now call the muleteer, was a little, hearty, broad-set, good-natured, chattering, toping kind of a fellow, who troubled his head very little with the hows and whens of life; so had mortgaged a month of his conventical wages in a borrachio, or leathern cask of wine, which he had disposed behind the calash, with a large russet-colored riding coat over it, to guard it from the sun: And as the weather was hot, and he not a niggard of his labors, walking ten times more than he rode—he found more occasions than those of nature, to fall back to the rear of his carriage; till by frequent coming and going it had so happened, that all his wine had leak'd out at the legal vent of the barrachio, before one half of the journey was finished.

Man is a creature born to habitudes.—The day had been sultry—the evening was delicious—the wine was generous—the Burgundian hill on which it grew was steep—a little tempting bush over the door of a cool cottage at the foot of it, hung vibrating in full harmony with the passions—a gentle air rustled distinctly through the leaves..... "Come—come, thirsty muleteer—come in."

.....The muleteer was a son of Adam: I need not say one word more. He gave the mules, each of 'em, a sound lash, and looking in the abbes's and Margarita's faces (as he did it)—as much as to say, "here I am"—he gave a second good crack—as much as to say to his mules, "get on"—so slinking behind, he enter'd the little inn at the foot of the hill.

The muleteer, as I told you was a little, joyous, chirping fellow, who thought not of to-morrow, nor of what had gone before, or what was to follow it, provided he got but his scantling of Burgundy, and a little chit-chat along with it, so entering into a long conversation, as how he was chief gardener to the convent of Andouillets, &c. &c. and out of friendship for the abbess and mademoiselle Margarita, who was only in her noviciate, he had come along with them from the confines of Savoy, &c. &c. . . . . and as how she had got a white swelling by her devotions—and what a nation of herbs he had procured to mollify her humors, &c. &c. and if the waters of Bourbon did not mend that leg—she might as well be lame of both . . . . &c. &c. &c.—He so contrived his story as absolutely to forget the heroine of it—and, with her, the little novice, and, what was a more ticklish point to be forgot than both—the two mules; who being creatures that take advantage of the world, inasmuch as their parents took it of them—and they not being in a condition to return the obligation downwards (as men and women and beasts are) . . . . they do it sideways, and longways and back-ways—and up hill and down hill, and which way they can . . . . Philosophers, with all their ethics, have never considered this rightly . . . . . how should the poor muleteer, then, in his cups, consider it at all? he did not in the least —'tis time we do. Let us leave him then in the vortex of his element, the happiest and most thoughtless of mortal men—and for a moment let us look after the mules, the abbess, and Margarita.

By virtue of the muleteer's two last strokes, the mules had gone quietly on, following their own consciences up the hill, till they had conquer'd about one half of it; when the elder of them, a shrewd crafty old devil, at the turn of an

angle, giving a side glance, and no muleteer behind them.....

By my fig, said she, swearing, I'll go no farther .... and if I do, replied the other ..... they shall make a drum of my hide.....

And so with one consent they stopp'd thus—

## CHAP. XXII.

—GET on with you, said the abbess.

—Why .... sh—ysh....cried Margarita.

Sh - - - a—shu-u——sh-u——sh - - aw—— shaw'd the abbess.

.....Whu—v—w——whew—w—w—whuv'd Margarita, pursing up her sweet lips betwixt a hoot and a whistle.

Thump——thump——thump——obstreperated the abbess of Andouillets with the end of her gold-headed cane against the bottom of the calash——

—The old mule let a f---

## CHAP. XXIII.

WE are ruin'd and undone, my child, said the abbess to Margarita———we shall be here all night—we shall be plunder'd—we shall be ravish'd.

——We shall be ravish'd, said Margarita—— as sure as a gun.

Sancta Maria! cried the abbess (forgetting the O!)——why was I govern'd by this wicked stiff joint? why did I leave the convent of Andouillets? and why didst thou not suffer thy servant to go unpolluted to her tomb?

O my finger! my finger! cried the novice, catching fire at the word servant——why was I not content to put it here, or there, any where rather than be in this strait!

——Strait! said the abbess.

——Strait——said the novice; for terror had struck their understanding—the one knew not what she said——the other what she answer'd.—O my virginity! virginity! cried the abbess.——inity!——inity!—said the novice, sobbing.

## CHAP. XXIV.

MY dear mother, quoth the novice, coming a little to herself,—there are two certain words, which I have been told will force any horse, or ass, or mule, to go up a hill whether he will or no; be he ever so obstinate or ill-will'd, the moment he hears them utter'd, he obeys. They are words.... Magic! cried the abbess, in the utmost horror—No; replied Margarita, calmly—but they are words sinful——What are they? quoth the abbess, interrupting her: They are sinful in the first degree, answered Margarita,—they are mortal;—and if we are ravish'd, and die unabsolved of them, we shall both——But you may pronounce them to me, quoth the abbess of Andouillets—They cannot, my dear mother, said the

novice, be pronounced at all ; they will make all the blood in one's body fly up into one's face—But you may whisper them in my ear, quoth the abbess.

Heaven ! hadst thou no guardian angel to delegate to the inn at the bottom of the hill ? was there no generous and friendly spirit unemployed—no agent in nature, by some monitory shivering, creeping along the artery which led to his heart, to rouze the muleteer from his banquet ?——no sweet minstrelsy to bring back the fair idea of the abbess and Margarita, with their black rosaries !

Rouse ! rouse !——but 'tis too late——the horrid words are pronounced this moment——and how to tell them———ye, who can speak of every thing existing, with unpolluted lips—instruct me—guide me——

## CHAP. XXV.

ALL sins whatever, quoth the abbess, turning casuist in the distress they were under, are held by the confessor of our convent to be either mortal or venial : There is no farther division. Now a venial sin being the slightest and least of all sins,—being halved—by taking either only the half of it, and leaving the rest——or, by taking it all, and amicably halving it betwixt yourself and another person—in course becomes diluted into no sin at all.

Now I see no sin in saying, bou, bou, bou, bou, bou, an hundred times together ; nor is there any turpitude in pronouncing the syllable ger, ger, *ger, ger,* ger, were it from our matins to our ves-

pers: Therefore, my dear daughter, continued the abbess of Andouillets—I will say bou, and thou shalt say ger; and then alternately, as there is no more sin in fou than in bou—thou shalt say fou——and I will come in (like fa, sol, la, re, me, ut, at our complines) with ter. And accordingly the abbess, giving the pitch note, set off thus:

Abbess, } Bou———bou———bou———
Margarita, } ——ger,———ger,———ger.
Margarita, } Fou———fou———fou———
Abbess, } ter,———ter,———ter.

The two mules acknowledged the notes by a mutual lash of their tails; but it went no farther.

—'Twill answer by and by, said the novice.

Abbess, } Bou - bou - bou - bou - bou - bou-
Margarita, } —ger, ger, ger, ger, ger, ger.

Quicker still, cried Margarita.

Fou, fou, fou, fou, fou, fou, fou, fou, fou,

Quicker still, cried Margarita.

Bou, bou, bou, bou, bou, bou, bou, bou, bou.

Quicker still—God preserve me! said the abbess—they do not understand us, cried Margarita—But the devil does, said the abbess of Andouillets.

## CHAP. XXVI.

WHAT a tract of country have I run! how many degrees nearer to the warm sun am I advanced, and how many fair and goodly cities have I seen, during the time you have been read-

ing, and reflecting, madam, upon this story! There's FONTAINBLEAU, and SENS, and JOIGNY, and AUXERRE, and DIJON the capital of Burgundy, and CHALLON, and MACON, the capital of the Maconese, and a score more upon the road to LYONS——And now I have run them over——I might as well talk to you of so many market towns in the moon, as tell you one word about them: It will be this chapter at the least, if not both this and the next entirely lost, do what I will—

—Why, 'tis a strange story, Tristram.

——Alas, madam, had it been upon some melancholy lecture of the cross—the peace of meekness, or the contentment of resignation—I had not been incommoded.: Or had I thought of writing it upon the purer abstractions of the soul, and that food of wisdom, and holiness, and contemplation, upon which the spirit of man (when separated from the body) is to subsist for ever.....you would have come with a better appetite from it.

.....I wish I never had wrote it; but as I never blot any thing out.....let us use some honest means to get it out of our heads directly.

....Pray reach me my fool's cap....I fear you sit upon it, madam.....'tis under the cushion.....I'll put in on.....

Bless me! you have had it on your head this half hour.....There then let it stay, with a

Fa-ra diddle di
and a fa-ri diddle d
and a high-dum—dye-dum
fiddle - - - dum - c.

And now, madam, we may venture, I hope, a little *to go on.*

## CHAP. XXVII.

..... ALL you need say of Fontainbleau (in case you are ask'd) is, that it stands about forty miles (south something) from Paris, in the middle of a large forest.....That there is something great in it.....That the king goes there once, every two or three years, with his whole court, for the pleasure of the chase.....and that during the carnival of sporting, an English gentleman of fashion (you need not forget yourself) may be accommodated with a nag or two, to partake of the sport, taking care only not to outgallop the king.....

Though there are two reasons why you need not talk loud of this to every one.

First, because 'twill make the said nags the harder to be got; and

Secondly, 'tis not a word of it true.....Allons!

As for SENS.....you may dispatch it in a word ....."'Tis an archiepiscopal see."

.....For JOIGNY.....the less, I think, one says of it, the better.

But for AUXERRE....I could go on for ever: For in my grand tour thro' Europe, in which, after all, my father (not caring to trust me with any one) attended me himself, with my uncle Toby, and Trim, and Obadiah, and indeed most of the family, except my mother, who being taken up with a project of knitting my father, a pair of large worsted breeches....(the thing is common sense)....and

she not caring to be put out of her way, she staid at home at SHANDY HALL, to keep things right during the expedition; in which, I say, my father stopping us two days at Auxerre, and his researches being ever of such a nature, that they would have found fruit even in a desert.....he has left me enough to say upon AUXERRE: In short, wherever my father went...but 'twas more remarkably so, in this journey through France and Italy, than in any other stages of his life....his road seemed to lie so much on one side of that wherein all other travellers had gone before him ....he saw kings, and courts, and silks of all colors, in such strange lights.....and his remarks and reasonings upon the characters, the manners and customs of the countries we pass'd over, were so opposite to those of all other mortal men, particularly those of my uncle Toby and Trim.....(to say nothing of myself).....and, to crown all.....the occurrences and scrapes which we were perpetually meeting and getting into, in consequence of his systems and opiniatry.....they were of so odd, so mixed and tragicomical a contexture.....that, the whole put together, it appears of so different a shade and tint from any tour of Europe which was ever executed.....that I will venture to pronounce.....the fault must be mine and mine only.....if it be not read by all travellers and travel-readers, till travelling is no more....or, which comes to the same point.....till the world finally takes it into its head to stand still.

.....But this rich bale is not to be open'd now; except a small thread or two of it, merely to unravel the mystery of my father's stay at AUXERRE.

.....As I have mentioned it.....'tis too slight to be kept suspended; and when 'tis wove in, there's *an end of it.*

We'll go, brother Toby, said my father, whilst dinner is coddling—to the abbey of SaintGermain, if it be only to see these bodies, of which monsieur Sequier has given such a recommendation ——I'll go see any body, quoth my uncle Toby; for he was all compliance thro' every step of the journey...Defend me! said my father....they are all mummies—Then one need not shave, quoth my uncle Toby...., Shave! no..... cried my father ...., 'twill be more like relations to go with our beards on—So out we sallied, the Corporal leading his master his arm, and bringing up the rear, to the abbey of Saint Germain.

Every thing is very fine, and very rich, and very superb and very magnificent, said my father; addressing himself to the sacristan, who was a young brother of the order of Benedictines..... but our curiosity has led us to see the bodies, of which monsieur Sequier has given the world so exact a description..... The sacristan made a bow, and lighting a torch first, which he had always in the vestry ready for the purpose, he led us into the tomb of St. Heribald..... This, said the sacristan, laying his hand upon the tomb, was a renowned prince of the house of Bavaria, who, under the successive reigns of Charlemagne, Louis le Debonair, and Charles the Bald, bore a great sway in the government, and had a principal hand in bringing every thing into order and discipline.....

Then he has been as great, said my uncle, in the field, as in the cabinet..... I dare say he has been a gallant soldier....He was a monk....said the sacristan.....

My uncle Toby and Trim sought comfort in each other's faces....but found it not: My father

clapp'd both his hands upon his cod-piece, which was a way he had when any thing hugely tickled him; for, tho' he hated a monk, and the very smell of a monk, worse than all the devils in hell .....yet the shot hitting my uncle Toby, and Trim so much harder than him, 'twas a relative triumph, and put him into the gayest humor in the world.

....And pray, what do you call this gentleman? quoth my father, rather sportingly. This tomb, said the young Benedictine, looking downwards, contains the bones of St. MAXIMA, who came from Ravenna, on purpose to touch the body.....Of Saint MAXIMUS, said my father, popping in with his saint before him.....They were two of the greatest saints in the whole martyrology, added my father.....Excuse me, said the sacristan..... 'twas to touch the bones of Saint Germain, the builder of the abbey....And what did she get by it? said my uncle Toby....What does any woman get by it? said my father.....MARTYRDOM; replied the young Benedictine, making a bow down to the ground, and uttering the word with so humble, but decisive a cadence, it disarmed my father for a moment. 'Tis supposed, continued the Benedictine, that St. Maxima has lain in this tomb four hundred years, and two hundred before her canonization....'Tis but a slow rise, brother Toby, quoth my father, in this self-same army of martyrs.....A desperate slow one, 'an please your honor, said Trim, unless one could purchase.....I should rather sell out entirely, quoth my uncle Toby....I am pretty much of your opinion, brother Toby, said my father.

.....Poor St. Maxima! said my uncle Toby low to himself, as we turn'd from her tomb: She was one of the fairest and most beautiful ladies either

of Italy or France, continued the sacristan..... But who the deuce has got laid down here, beside her ? quoth my father, pointing with his cane to a large tomb as he walked on....It is St. Optat, sir, answered the sacristan.....And properly is St. Optat plac'd ! said my father : And what is St. Optat's story ? continued he. St. Optat, replied the sacristan, was a bishop..... I thought so, by heaven ! cried my father, interrupting him.....St. Optat !....how should St. Optat fail ? so snatching out his pocket-book, and the young Benedictine holding him the torch as he wrote, he set it down as a new prop to his system of christian names ; and I will be bold to say, so disinterested was he in the search of truth, that, had he found a treasure in St. Optat's tomb, it would not have made him half so rich : 'Twas as successful a short visit as ever was paid to the dead ; and so highly was his fancy pleas'd with all that had passed in it,.... that he determined at once to stay another day in Auxerre.

.....I'll see the rest of these good gentry to-morrow, said my father, as we cross'd over the square ....And while you are paying that visit, brother Shandy, quoth my uncle Toby....the Corporal and I will mount the ramparts.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

—NOW this is the most puzzled skein of all —for in this last chapter, as far at least as it has helped me thro' Auxerre, I have been getting forwards in two different journies together, and with the same dash of the pen....for I have got entirely out of Auxerre in this journey, which I am writing now, and I am got half way

out of Auxerre in that which I shall write hereafter.—There is but a certain degree of perfection in every thing; and by pushing at something beyond that, I have brought myself into such a situation, as no traveller ever stood before me; for I am this moment walking across the market-place of Auxerre, with my father and my uncle Toby, in our way back to dinner....and I am this moment also entering Lyons, with my post-chaise broke into a thousand pieces....and I am moreover this moment in a handsome pavilion built by Pringello,* upon the banks of the Garonne, which mons. Sligniac has lent me, and where I now sit rhapsodizing all these affairs.

.....Let me collect myself, and pursue my journey.

## CHAP. XXIX.

I AM glad of it, said I, settling the account with myself as I walked into Lyons—my chaise being all laid higgledy-piggledy with my baggage in a cart, which was moving slowly before me—I am heartily glad, said I, that 'tis all broke to pieces; for now I can go directly by water to Avignon, which will carry me on an hundred and twenty miles of my journey, and not cost me seven livres—and from thence, continued I, bringing forwards the account, I can hire a couple of mules—or asses, if I like, (for nobody knows me) and cross the plains of Languedoc, for almost nothing—I

* The same Don Pringello, the celebrated Spanish architect, of whom my cousin Antony has made such honorable mention, in a scholium to the Tale inscribed to his name. Vid. p. 129, small edit.

shall gain four hundred livres by the misfortune clear into my purse; and pleasure! worth—worth double the money by it. With what velocity, continued I, clapping my two hands together, shall I fly down the rapid Rhone, with the VIVARES on my right hand, and DAUPHINY on my left, scarce seeing the ancient cities of VIENNE, VALENCE and VIVIERES? What a flame will it rekindle in the lamp, to snatch a blushing grape from the hermitage and cote roti, as I shoot by the foot of them? and what a fresh spring in the blood! to behold upon the banks, advancing and retiring, the castles of romance, whence courteous knights have whilome rescued the distress'd—and see, virtiginous, the rocks, the mountains, the cataracts, and all the hurry which nature is in with all her great works about her.

As I went on thus, methought my chaise, the wreck of which look'd stately enough at the first, insensibly grew less and less in its size; the freshness of the painting was no more—the gilding lost its lustre—and the whole affair appeared so poor in my eyes—so sorry! so contemptible! and, in a word, so much worse than the abbess of Andouillets' itself—that I was just opening my mouth to give it to the devil—when a pert vamping chaise-undertaker, stepping nimbly across the street, demanded if monsieur would have his chaise refitted—No, no, said I, shaking my head sidewise.—Would monsieur choose to sell it? rejoin'd the undertaker—With all my soul, said I—the iron work is worth forty livres, and the glasses worth forty more—and the leather you may take to live on.

..... What a mine of wealth, quoth I, as he counted me the money, has this post-chaise brought me in? And this is my usual method of

book-keeping, at least with the disasters of life—making a penny of every one of them as they happen to me.....

..... Do, my dear Jenny, tell the world for me, how I behaved under one, the most oppressive of its kind which could befal me as a man, proud, as he ought to be, of his manhood .....

'Tis enough, said'st thou, coming close up to me, as I stood with my garters in my hand, reflecting upon what had *not* pass'd ..... 'Tis enough, Tristram, and I am satisfied, said'st thou, whispering these words in my ear, **** ** **** *** ****** ;——**** ** ****——any other man would have sunk down to the centre—

—Every thing is good for something, quoth I.

——I'll go into Wales for six weeks, and drink goat's whey———and I'll gain seven years longer life for the accident.—For which reason I think myself inexcusable, for blaming fortune so often as I have done, for pelting me all my life long, like an ungracious dutchess, as I call'd her, with so many small evils: Surely if I have any cause to be angry with her, 'tis that she has not sent me great ones—a score of good cursed bouncing losses, would have been as good as a pension to me.

—One of an hundred a year, or so, is all I wish—I would not be at the plague of paying land-tax for a larger.

## CHAP. XXX.

TO those who call vexations, VEXATIONS, as knowing what they are, there could not be a greater, than to be the best part of a day in Lyons, the most opulent and flourishing city in France, enriched with the most fragments of antiquity—and not able to see it.—To be withheld upon any account, must be a vexation; but to be withheld by a vexation—must certainly be, what philosophy justly calls

VEXATION
upon
VEXATION.

I had got my two dishes of milk coffee (which, by the bye, is excellently good for a consumption, but you must boil the milk and coffee together—otherwise 'tis only coffee and milk)—and as it was no more than eight in the morning, and the boat did not go off till noon, I had time to see enough of Lyons to tire the patience of all the friends I had in the world with it.—I will take a walk to the cathedral, said I, looking at my list, and see the wonderful mechanism of this great clock of Lippius of Basil, in the first place——

Now, of all things in the world, I understand the least of mechanism—I have neither genius, or taste, or fancy—and have a brain so entirely unapt for every thing of that kind, that I solemnly declare, I was never yet able to comprehend the principles of motion of a squirrel cage, or a common knife-grinder's wheel——tho' I have many an hour of my life looked up with great devotion at the one—and stood up with as much patience as any Christian ever could do at the other——

I'll go see the surprizing movements of this great clock, said I, the very first thing I do: And then I will pay a visit to the great library of the Jesuits, and procure, if possible, a sight of the thirty volumes of the general History of China, wrote (not in the Tartarian) but in the Chinese language, and in the Chinese character too.

Now, I almost know as little of the Chinese language, as I do of the mechanism of Lippius's clock-work; so, why these should have jostled themselves into the two first articles of my list—I leave to the curious as a problem of Nature; I own it looks like one of her ladyship's obliquities; and they who court her, are interested in finding out her humor as much as I.

When these curiosities are seen, quoth I, half addressing myself to my valet de place, who stood behind me—'twill be no hurt if we go to the church of St. Ireneus, and see the pillar to which Christ was tied—and after that the house where Pontius Pilate lived—'Twas at the next town, said the valet de place—at Vienne; I am glad of it, said I, rising briskly from my chair, and walking across the room with strides twice as long as my usual pace—"for so much the sooner shall I be at the tomb of the two lovers."

What was the cause of this movement, and why I took such long strides in uttering this—I might leave to the curious too: But as no principle of clock-work is concern'd in it—'twill be as well for the reader if I explain it myself.

## CHAP. XXXI.

O! There is a sweet æra in the life of man, when, (the brain being tender and fibrillous, and more like pap than any thing else)—a story read of two fond lovers, separated from each other by cruel parents, and by still more cruel destiny ———

Amandus——He
Amanda——She

each ignorant of the other's course;

He——east
She——west———

Amandus taken captive by the Turks, and carried to the emperor of Morocco's court, where the princess of Morocco falling in love with him, keeps him twenty years in prison, for the love of his Amanda——

She—(Amanda) all the time wandering barefoot, and with dishevell'd hair, o'er rocks and mountains, inquiring for Amandus—Amandus! Amandus!—making every hill and valley to echo back his name———

Amandus! Amandus!——

At every town and city sitting down forlorn at the gate—Has Amandus—has my Amandus enter'd?—till going round, and round, and round the world—chance unexpectedly bringing them, at the same moment of the night, tho' by different ways, to the gate of Lyons, their native city, and each, in well-known accents, calling out aloud,

Is Amandus<br>Is my Amanda } still alive?

they fly into each other's arms,and both drop down dead for joy.

There is a soft æra in every gentle mortal's life, where such a story affords more pabulum to the brain, than all the frusts, and crusts, and rusts of antiquity, which travellers can cook up for it.

—'Twas all that stuck on the right side of the colander in my own, of what Spon and others, in their accounts of Lyons had strained into it; and finding moreover, in some Itinerary, but in what, God knows—that, sacred to the fidelity of Amandus and Amanda, a tomb was built without the gates, where, to this hour lovers call upon them to attest their truths,—I never could get into a scrape of that kind in my life, but this tomb of the lovers would, somehow or other, come in at the close—nay, such a kind of empire had it establish'd over me, that I could seldom think or speak of Lyons——and sometimes not so much as see even a Lyons waistcoat, but this remnant of antiquity would present itself to my fancy; and I have often said, in my wild way of running on——though I fear with some irreverence—— "I thought this shrine (neglected as it was) as valuable as that of Mecca, and so little short, except in wealth, of the Santa Casa itself, that, some time or other, I would go a pilgrimage, (tho' I had not other business at Lyons) on purpose to pay it a visit."

'In my list, therefore, of videnda at Lyons, this, tho' last—was not, you see, least; so, taking a dozen or two longer strides than usual across my room, just whilst it passed my brain, I walked down calmly into the Basse Cour, in order to sally forth; and having called for my bill—as it was uncertain whether I should return to my inn,

I had paid it—had moreover given the maid ten sous, and was just receiving the dernier compliments of monsieur Le Blanc, for a pleasant voyage down the Rhone—when I was stopped at the gate——

## CHAP. XXXII.

'TWAS by a poor ass who had just turned in with a couple of large panniers upon his back, to collect eleemosynary turnip tops and cabbage leaves;—and stood dubious, with his two fore-feet on the inside of the threshold, and with his two hinder-feet towards the street, as not knowing very well whether he was to go in, or no.

Now, 'tis animal (be in what hurry I may) I cannot bear to strike—there is a patient endurance of sufferings, wrote so unaffectedly in his looks and carriage, which pleads so mightily for him, that it always disarms me; and to that degree, that I do not like to speak unkindly to him: On the contrary, meet him where I will—whether in town or country, in cart or under panniers ——whether in liberty or bondage—I have ever something civil to say to him on my part; and as one word begets another (if he has as little to do as I)—I generally fall into conversation with him; and surely never is my imagination so busy as in framing his responses from the etchings of his countenance——and, where those carry me not deep enough——in flying from my own heart into his, and seeing what is natural for an ass to think—as well as a man, upon the occasion. —In truth, it is the only creature of all the classes of beings below me, with whom I can do this;

for parrots, jackdaws, &c. I never exchange a word with them—nor with apes, &c. for pretty near the same reason; they act by rote, as the others speak by it, and equally make me silent: Nay, my dog and my cat, though I value them both—(and for my dog he would speak if he could) yet some how or other, they neither of them possess the talents for conversation.——I can make nothing of a discourse with them, beyond the proposition, the reply, and rejoinder, which terminated my father's and my mother's conversations, in his beds of justice—and, those utter'd——there's an end of the dialogue.....

——But with an ass, I can commune forever.

Come, Honesty! said I,——seeing it was impracticable to pass betwixt him and the gate——art thou for coming in or going out?

The ass twisted his head round to look up the street——

Well—replied I—we'll wait a minute for thy driver:—

——He turned his head thoughtful about and looked wistfully the opposite way——

I understand thee perfectly; answered I——if thou takest a wrong step in this affair, he will cudgel thee to death——Well! a minute is but a minute, and if it saves a fellow-creature a drubbing, it shall not be set down as ill-spent.

He was eating the stem of an artichoke as this discourse went on, and in the little peevish contentions of Nature, betwixt hunger and unsavoriness, and dropt it out of his mouth half a dozen times, and pick'd it up again—God help thee,

Jack! said I, thou hast a bitter breakfast on't—and many a bitter day's labor——and many a bitter blow, I fear, for its wages——'tis all—all bitterness to thee, whatever life is to others.

And now thy mouth, if one knew the truth of it, is as bitter, I dare say, as soot—(for he had cast aside the stem) and thou hast not a friend perhaps in all this world, that will give thee a macaroon——In saying this, I pull'd out a paper of e'm, which I had just purchased, and gave him one——and at this moment that I am telling it, my heart smites me, that there was more of pleasantry in the conceit, of seeing how an ass would eat a macaroon——than of benevolence in giving him one, which presided in the act.

When the ass had eaten his macaroon, I press'd him to come in——the poor beast was heavy loaded——his legs seem'd to tremble under him ——he hung rather backwards, and as I pulled at his halter, it broke short in my hand——— he look'd up pensively in my face——"Don't thrash me with it—but, if you will, you may"—If I do, said I, I'll be d—d.

The word was but one half of it pronounced, like the abbess of Andouillets—(so there was no sin in it)—when a person coming in, let fall a thundering bastinado upon the poor devil's crupper, which put an end to the ceremony.——

Out upon it!

cried I——but the interjection was equivocal—and, I think, wrong placed too——for the end of an osier which had started out from the contexture of the ass's pannier, had caught hold of my breeches pocket as he rush'd by me, and rent it in the most disastrous direction you can imagine ——so that the

Out upon it! in my opinion, should have come in here——but this I leave to be settled by

The

REVIEWERS

of

MY BREECHES,

which I have brought over along with me for that purpose.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

WHEN all was set to rights, I came down stairs again into the Basse Cour with my valet de place, in order to sally out towards the tomb of the two lovers, &c.——and was a second time stopp'd at the gate——not by the ass——but by the person who struck him; and who by that time, had taken possession (as is not uncommon after a defeat) of the very spot of ground where the ass stood.

It was a commissary sent to me from the post-office, with a rescript in his hand for the payment of some six livres odd sous.——

Upon what account? said I.——'Tis upon the part of the king, replied the commissary, heaving up both his shoulders.——

—My good friend, quoth I——as sure as I am I——and you are you——

——And who are you? said he——Don't puzzle me; said I.

## CHAP. XXXXIV.

——BUT it is an indubitable verity, continued I, addressing myself to the commissary, changing only the form of my asseveration——that I owe the king of France nothing but my good will; for he is a very honest man, and I wish him all health and pastime in the world.

Pardonnez moi—replied the commissary, you are indebted to him six livres four sous, for the next post from hence to St. Fons, in your route to Avignon——which being a post royal, you pay double for the horses and postillion——otherwise 'twould have amounted to no more than three livres two sous.

——But I don't go by land, said I.

——You may, if you please; replied the commissary——

Your most obedient servant—said I, making him a low bow.

The commissary, with all the sincerity of grave good breeding——made me one as low again. I never was more disconcerted with a bow in my life.

—The devil take the serious character of these people! quoth I (aside)——they understand no more of IRONY than this——

The comparison was standing close by with his panniers——but something seal'd up my lips—I could not pronounce the name——

Sir, said I, collecting myself—it is not my intention to take post.

But you may—said he,—persisting in his first reply——you may take post if you choose——

—And I may take salt to my pickled herring, said I, if I choose———

—But I do not choose——

—But you must pay for it, whether you do or no———

Ay! for the salt; said I (I know)——

—And for the post too; added he.—Defend me! cried I!——

I travel by water——I am going down the Rhone this very afternoon——my baggage is in the boat—and I have actually paid nine livres for my passage——

C'est tout egal;—'tis all one; said he.

Bon Dieu! what, pay for the way I go! and for the way I do not go!

—C'est tout egal; replied the commissary—

—The devil it is! said I,—but I will go to ten thousand bastiles first——

O England! England! thou land of liberty, and climate of good sense, thou tenderest of mothers —and gentlest of nurses, cried I, kneeling upon one knee, as I was beginning my apostrophe—

When the director of madame Le Blanc's conscience coming in at that instant, and seeing a person in black, with a face as pale as ashes, at his devotions—looking still paler by the contrast and distress of his drapery—ask'd, if I stood in want of the aids of the Church——

I go by WATER—said I,—and here's another will be for making me pay for going by OIL.

## CHAP. XXXV.

AS I perceived the commissary of the post-office would have his six livres, four sous, I had nothing else for it, but to say some smart thing upon the occasion, worth the money.

And so I set off thus——

—And pray, Mr. Commissary, by what law of courtesy is a defenceless stranger to be used just the reverse from what you use a Frenchman in this matter?

By no means, said he.

Excuse me, said I—for you have begun, sir; with first tearing off my breeches—and now you want my pocket.———

Whereas— had you first taken my pocket, as you do with your own people—and then left me bare-a—'d after—I had been a beast to have complain'd———

As it is———

——'Tis contrary to the law of nature.

——'Tis contrary to reason.

——'Tis contrary to the GOSPEL.

But not to this—said he—putting a printed paper into my hand.

PAR LE ROY.

——'Tis a pithy prolegomenon, quoth I—and so read on - - -

down the imposition amongst my remarks before I retir'd from the place; so putting my hand into my coat-pocket for my remarks—(which, by the bye, may be a caution to travellers to take a little more care of their remarks for the future) "my remarks were stolen."—Never did sorry traveller make such a pother and racket about his remarks as I did about mine, upon the occasion.

Heaven! earth! sea! fire! cried I, calling in every thing to my aid but what I should—my remarks are stolen!—what shall I do?—Mr. Commissary! pray, did I drop any remarks as I stood beside you!———

You dropp'd a good many very singular ones; replied he;—Pugh! said I, those were but a few not worth above six livres two sous—but these are a large parcel—He shook his head——Monsieur Le Blanc! Madam Le Blanc! did you see any papers of mine?—you maid of the house! run up stairs—Francois! run up after her—

—I must have my remarks—they were the best remarks, cried I, that ever were made——the wisest—the wittiest—What shall I do!——which way shall I turn myself?

Sancho Panca, when he lost his ass's FURNITURE, did not exclaim more bitterly.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

WHEN the first transport was over, and the registers of the brain were beginning to get a little out of the confusion into which this jumble of cross accidents had cast them—it then

presently occur'd to me, that I had left my remarks in the pocket of the chaise—and that in selling my chaise, I had sold my remarks along with it, to the chaise-vamper.

I leave this void space that the reader may swear into it any oath that he is most accustomed to—For my own part, if ever I swore a whole oath into a vacancy in my life, I think it was into that—*** ******, said I—and so many remarks thro' France, which were as full of wit as an egg is full of meat, and as well worth four hundred guineas, as the said egg is worth a penny—have I been selling here to a chaise-vamper—for four Louis d'Ors——and giving him a post-chaise (by heaven) worth six into the bargain: Had it been to Dodsley, or Becket, or any creditable bookseller, who was either leaving off business, and wanted a post-chaise—or who was beginning it—and wanted my remarks, and two or three guineas along with them——I could have borne it——but to a chaise-vamper!—show me to him this moment, Francois—said I—The valet de place put on his hat and led the way—and I pull'd off mine, as I pass'd the commissary, and followed him.

## CHAP. XXXVIII.

WHEN we arrived at the chaise-vamper's house, both the house and the shop were shut up; it was the eighth of September, the nativity of the blessed Virgin Mary, mother of God—

——Tantarra-ra-tan-tivi—the whole world was going out a May-poling——frisking here—capering there—nobody cared a button for me or

my remarks; so I sat me down upon a bench by the door philosophizing upon my condition: By a better fate than usually attends me, I had not waited half an hour, when the mistress came in, to take the papilliotes from off her hair, before she went to the May-poles——

The French women, by the bye, love May-poles, a la folie——that is, as much as their matins—give 'em but a May-pole, whether in May, June, July, or September——they never count the times—down it goes—'tis meat, drink, washing and lodging to 'em—and had we but the policy, an' please your worships (as wood is a little scarce in France) to send them but plenty of May-poles——

The women would set them up; and when they had done, they would dance round them (and the men for company) till they were all blind.

The wife of the chaise-vamper stepp'd in, I told you, to take the papilliotes from off her hair—— the toilette stands still for no man——so she jerk'd off her cap, to begin with them as she open'd the door; in doing which, one of them fell upon the ground——I instantly saw it was my own writing——

——O Seigneur! cried I——you have got all my remarks upon your head, madam!——J'en suis bien mortifiee, said she—'tis well, thinks I, they have stuck there——for, could they have gone deeper, they would made such confusion in a French woman's noddle——she had better have gone with it unfrizzled to the day of eternity.

Tenez——said she——so without any idea of the nature of my suffering, she took them from

her curls, and put them gravely, one by one into my hat——one was twisted this way——another twisted that——ay! by my faith, and when they are published, quoth I—

They will be worse twisted still.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

AND now for Lippius's clock! said I, with the air of a man who had got thro' all his difficulties—Nothing can prevent us seeing that and the Chinese history, &c. except the time, said Francois—for 'tis almost eleven——Then we must speed the faster, said I, striding it away to the cathedral.

I cannot say, in my heart, that it gave me any concern in being told by one of the minor canons, as I was entering the west door,—That Lippius's great clock was all out of joints, and had not gone for some years——It will give me the more time, thought I, to peruse the Chinese history; and besides, I shall be able to give the world a better account of the clock in its decay, than I could have done in its flourishing condition——

—And so away I posted to the college of the Jesuits.

Now it is with the project of getting a peep at the history of China in Chinese characters——as with many others I could mention, which strike the fancy only at a distance; for as I came nearer and nearer to the point—my blood cool'd—the freak gradually went off, till at length I would not have given a cherry-stone to have it gratified—

The truth was, my time was short, and my heart was at the Tomb of the Lovers—I wish to God, said I, as I got the rapper in my hand, that the key of the library may be but lost; it fell out as well———

For all the JESUITS had got the cholic—and to that degree, as never was known in the memory of the oldest practitioner.

## CHAP. XL.

AS I knew the geography of the Tomb of the Lovers, as well as if I had lived twenty years in Lyons, namely, that it was upon the turning of my right hand, just without the gate leading to the Fauxbourg de Vaix—I dispatch'd Francois to the boat, that I might pay the homage I so long ow'd it, without a witness of my weakness. —I walk'd with all imaginable joy towards the place—When I saw the gate which intercepted the tomb, and my heart glowed within me——

—Tender and faithful spirits! cried I, addressing myself to Amandus and Amanda—long—long have I tarried to drop this tear upon your tomb—I come—I come——

When I came—there was no tomb to drop it upon.

What would I have given for my uncle Toby to have whistled, Lillabullero!

## CHAP. XLI.

NO matter how, or in what mood, but I flew from the tomb of the lovers——or rather I did not fly from it (for there was no such thing existing) and just got time enough to the boat to save my passage; and ere I had sailed an hundred yards, the Rhone and Saon met together and carried me down merrily betwixt them.

But I have described this voyage down the Rhone before I made it.——

—So now I am in Avignon——and as there is nothing to see but the old house in which the duke of Ormond resided, and nothing to stop me but a short remark upon the place, in three minutes you will see me crossing the bridge upon a mule, with Francois upon a horse with my portmanteau behind him, and the owner of both, striding the way before us with a long gun upon his shoulder and a sword under his arm, lest peradventure we should run away with his cattle. Had you seen my breeches in entering Avignon—tho' you'd have seen them better, I think, as I mounted——you would not have thought the precaution amiss, or found in your heart to have taken it in dudgeon: For my own part, I took it most kindly; and determined to make him a present of them, when we got to the end of our journey, for the trouble they had put him to, of arming himself at all points against them.

Before I go farther, let me get rid of my remark upon Avignon, which is this; That I think it wrong, merely because a man's hat has been

blown off his head by chance the first night he comes to Avignon—that he should therefore say, "Avignon is more subject to high winds than "any town in all France :" For which reason, I laid no stress upon the accident, till I had enquired of the master of the inn about it, who telling me seriously it was so—and hearing moreover, the windyness of Avignon spoke of in the country about as a proverb—I set it down, merely to ask the learned, what can be the cause—the consequence I saw—for they are all Dukes, Marquisses, and Counts, there———the duce a Baron in all Avignon——so that there is scarce any talking to them on a windy day.

Prithee, friend, said I, take hold of my mule for a moment—for I wanted to pull off one of my jack-boots, which hurt my heel———The man was standing quite idle at the door of the inn, and as I had taken it into my head he was some way concerned about the house or stable, I put the bridle into his hand—so began with my boot :—When I had finished the affair, I turned about to take the mule from the man, and thank him—

—But monsieur le Marquis had walked in—

## CHAP. XLII.

I HAD now the whole south of France, from the banks of the Rhone to those of the Garonne, to traverse upon my mule at my own leisure ;—at my own leisure—for I had left Death, the Lord knows—and he only—how far behind me,——"I have followed many a man through France, quoth he—but never at this mettlesome rate."—Still he followed,—and still I fled him—

but I fled him cheerfully;—still he pursued—but like one who pursued his prey without hope;—as he lagg'd,——every step he lost, softened his looks——Why should I fly him at this rate?

So notwithstanding all the commissary of the post-office had said, I changed the mode of my travelling once more; and, after so precipitate and rattling a course as I had run, I flattered my fancy with thinking of my mule, and that I should traverse the rich plains of Languedoc upon his back, as slowly as foot could fall.

There is nothing more pleasing to a traveller—or more terrible to travel-writers, than a large rich plain; especially if it is without great rivers or bridges, and presents nothing to the eye, but one unvaried picture of plenty: For, after they have once told you that 'tis delicious! or delightful! (as the case happens)——that the soil was grateful, and that nature pours out all her abundance, &c.——they have then a large plain upon their hands, which they know not what to do with——and which is of little or no use to them but to carry them to some town; and that town, perhaps of little more, but a new place to start from to the next plain——and so on——

—This is most terrible work; judge if I don't manage my plans better.

## CHAP. XLIII.

I HAD not gone above two leagues and a half, before the man with his gun began to look at his priming.

I had three several times loitered terribly behind; half a mile at least every time; once in deep conference with a drum-maker, who was making drums for the fairs of Baucaira and Tarascone—I did not understand the principles——

The second time, I cannot so properly say I stopp'd—for, meeting a couple of Franciscans straitened more for time than myself, and not being able to get to the bottom of what I was about, I had turned back with them———

The third was an affair of trade with a gossip, for a hand basket of Provence figs for four sous: This would have been transacted at once, but for a case of conscience at the close of it; for when the figs were paid for, it turn'd out, that there were two dozen of eggs covered over with vine-leaves at the bottom of the basket—As I had no intention of buying eggs—I made no sort of claim of them—As for the space they had occupied—what signified it? I have figs enow for my money———

——But it was my intention to have the basket—it was the gossip's intention to keep it without which she could do nothing with her eggs—and unless I had the basket, I could do as little with my figs,—which were too ripe already and most of 'em burst at the side: This brought on a short contention, which terminated in sundry proposals, what we should both do——

—How we disposed of our eggs and figs, I defy you, or the devil himself, had he not been there (which I am persuaded he was) to form the least probable conjecture. You will read the whole of it—not this year, for I am hastening to the story of my uncle Toby's amours—but you will read it

in the collection of those which have arose out of the journey across the plain——and which, therefore, I call my

PLAIN STORIES.

How far my pen has been fatigued like those of other travellers, in this journey of it, over so barren a tract—the world must judge——but the traces of it, which are now all set o-vibrating together this moment, tell me 'tis the most fruitful and busy period of my life; for, as I had made no convention with my man with the gun as to time—by stopping and talking to every soul I met who was not in a full trot—joining all parties before me—waiting for every soul behind—hailing all those who were coming thro' cross-roads—arresting all kinds of beggars, pilgrims, fiddlers, friars—not passing by a woman in a mulberry tree without commending her legs, and tempting her into conversation with a pinch of snuff—In short, by seizing every handle, of what size or shape soever which chance held out to me in this journey——I turned my plain into a city—I was always in company, and with a great variety too; and as my mule loved society as much as myself, and had some proposals always on his part to offer to every beast he met—I am confident we could have passed thro' Pall Mall or St. James's Street for a month together, with fewer adventures—and seen less of human nature.

O! there is that sprightly frankness which at once unpins every plait of a Languedocian's dress—that whatever is beneath it, looks so like the simplicity which poets sung of in better days—I will delude my fancy, and believe it is so.

'Twas in the road betwixt Nismes and Lunel,

where there is the best Muscatto wine in all France —and which, by the bye, belongs to the honest canons of MONTPELLIER—and foul befal the man who has drank it at their table, who grudges them a drop of it.

—The sun was set—they had done their work; the nymphs had tied up their hair afresh——and the swains were preparing for a carousal——My mule made a dead point—'tis the fife and tabourin, said I——I am frighten'd to death, quoth he—— They are running at the ring of pleasure, said I, giving him a prick——By saint Boogar, and all the saints at the backside of the door of Purgatory, said he—(making the same resolution with the abbess of Andouillets) I'll not go a step farther——'Tis very well, sir, said I—I never will argue a point with one of your family, as long as I live; so leaping off his back, and kicking off one boot into this ditch, and t'other into that—I'll take a dance, said I—so stay you here.

A sun-burnt daughter of Labor rose up from the group to meet me as I advanced towards them; her hair, which was a dark chesnut, approaching rather to a black, was tied up in a knot, all but a single tress.

We want a cavalier, said she, holding out both her hands as if to offer them—And a cavalier ye shall have, said I, taking hold of both of them.

Hadst thou, Nannette, being array'd like a duchesse!

——But that cursed slit in thy petticoat!

Nannette cared not for it.

We could not have done without you, said she, letting go one hand, with self-taught politeness, and leading me up with the other.

A lame youth whom Apollo had recompensed with a pipe, and to which he had added a tabou-

rin of his own accord, ran sweetly over the prelude, as he sat upon the bank—Tie me up this tress instantly, said Nannette, putting a piece of string into my hand——It taught me to forget I was a stranger——The whole knot fell down——We had been seven years acquainted.

The youth struck the note upon the tabourin——his pipe followed and off we bounded——"the deuce take that slit!"

The sister of the youth, who had stolen her voice from heaven, sung alternately with her brother—'twas a Gascoigne roundelay—

VIVA LA JOIA!
FIDON LA TRISTESSA!

The nymphs join'd in unison, and their swains an octave below them——

I would have given a crown to have it sew'd up—Nannette would not have given a sous—Viva la joia! was in her lips—Viva la joia! was in her eyes. A transient spark of amity shot across the space betwixt us—She look'd amiable!

Why could I not live and end my days thus? Just Disposer of our joys and sorrows, cried I, why could not a man sit down in the lap of content here—and dance, and sing, and say his prayers, and go to heaven with this nut-brown maid? capriciously did she bend her head on one side, and dance up insidious——Then 'tis time to dance off, quoth I; so changing only partners and tunes, I danced it away from Lunel to Montpellier——from thence to Pescus, Beziers——I danced it along thro' Narbonne, Carcasson, and Castle Navdairy, till at last I danced myself into Perdrillo's pavilion, where pulling out a paper of black lines, that I might go on straight forwards, without digression or parenthesis, in my uncle Toby's amours—I began thus——

END OF THE SEVENTH BOOK.

THE

# LIFE AND OPINIONS

OF

# TRISTRAM SHANDY, Gent.

## CHAP. I.

.....BUT softly ....for in these sportive plains, and under this genial sun, where, at this instant, all flesh is running out piping, fiddling and dancing to the vintage, and, every step that's taken, the judgment is surprized by the imagination, I defy, notwithstanding all that has been said upon straight lines in sundry pages of my book ..... I defy the best cabbage-planter that ever existed, whether he plants backwards or forwards, it makes little difference in the account (except that he will have more to answer for in the one case than the other)..... I defy him to go on cooly, critically, and canonically, planting his cabbages one by one, in straight lines, and stoical distances, especially if slits in petticoats are unsew'd up .... without ever and anon strad-

dling out, or fiddling into some bastardly digression.—In Freeze-land, Fog-land, and some other lands I wot of .... it may be done .....

But in this clear climate of fantasy and perspiration, where every idea, sensible and insensible, gets vent ..... in this land, my dear Eugenius ..... in this fertile land of chivalry and romance, where I now sit, unskrewing my inkhorn to write my uncle Toby's amours, and with all the meanders of JULIA's tract in quest of her DIEGO, in full view of my study window .... if thou comest not and takest me by the hand .....

What a work it is likely to turn out!

Let us begin.

## CHAP. II.

IT is with LOVE as with CUCKOLDOM ..... But now I am talking of beginning a book, and have long had a thing upon my mind to be imparted to the reader, which, if not imparted now, can never be imparted to him as long as I live (whereas the COMPARISON may be imparted to him any hour in the day).... I'll just mention it, and begin in good earnest.

The thing is this.

That of all the several ways of beginning a book, which are now in practice throughout the known world, I am confident my own way of doing it is the best—I am sure it is the most religious —*for I begin* with writing the first sentence .... *and trusting* to almighty God for the second.

'Twould cure an author forever of the fuss and folly of opening his street door, and calling in his neighbors, and friends, and kinsfolk, with the devil and all his imps, with their hammers and engines, &c. only to observe how one sentence of mine follows another, and how the plan follows the whole.

I wish you saw me half starting out of my chair, —with what confidence as I grasp the elbow of it, I look up—catching the idea, even sometimes before it half way reaches me.....

I believe in my conscience I intercept many a thought which heaven intended for another man.

Pope and his Portrait* are fools to me—no martyr is ever so full of faith or fire..... I wish I could say, of good works too..... but I have no

Zeal or Anger..... or
Anger or Zeal.....

And till gods and men agree together to call it by the same name.....the errantest TARTUFFE in science.....in politics.....or in religion, shall never kindle a spark within me, or have a worse word, or a more unkind greeting, than what he will read in the next chapter.

## CHAP. III.

.....BON jour !.....good morrow !.....so you have got your cloak on betimes !.....but 'tis a cold morning, and you judge the matter

* Vide Pope's Portrait.

rightly....'tis better to be well mounted, than go o'foot.....and obstructions in the glands are dangerous.....And how goes it with thy concubine..... thy wife.....and thy little ones o'both sides? and when did you hear from the old gentleman and lady.....your sister, aunt, uncle and cousins.....I hope they have got the better of their colds, coughs, claps, tooth-aches, fevers stranguaries, sciaticas, swellings, and sore eyes?.....What a devil of an apothecary! to take so much blood.... give such a vile purge....puke....poultice....plaster.....night draught.....glister.....blister?..... And why so many grains of calomel! Santa Maria! and such a dose of opium! periclitating, pardi! the whole family of ye, from head to tail .....By my great aunt Dinah's old black velvet mask! I think there was no occasion for it.

Now, this being a little bald about the chin, by frequently putting off and on, before she was got with child by the coachman.....not one of our family would wear it after. To cover the MASK afresh, was more than the mask was worth.....and to wear a mask which was bald, or which could be half seen through, was as bad as having no mask at all——

This is the reason, may it please your reverences, that in all our numerous family, for these four generations, we count no more than one archbishop, a Welsh judge, some three or four aldermen, and a single mountebank.....

In the sixteenth century, we boast of no less than a dozen alchymists.

## CHAP. IV.

"IT is with love as with cuckoldom".....the suffering party is at least the third, but generally the last in the house who knows any thing about the matter: This comes, as all the world knows, from having half a dozen words for one thing; and so long as what, in this vessel of the human frame, is Love—may be hatred, in that —Sentiment half a yard higher.....and Nonsense.....no, madam,—not there.....I mean at the part I am now pointing to with my fore-finger—how can we help ourselves?

Of all mortal, and immortal men too, if you please, who ever soliloquized upon this mystic subject, my uncle Toby was the worst fitted, to have push'd his researches thro' such a contention of feelings; and he had infallibly let them all run on, as we do worse matters, to see what they would turn out.....had not Bridget's pre-notification of them to Susannah, and Susannah's repeated manifestoes thereupon to all the world, made it necessary for my uncle Toby to look into the affair.

## CHAP. V.

WHY weavers, gardeners, and gladiators—or a man with a pined leg (proceeding from some ailment in the foot).....should ever have had some tender nymph breaking her heart in secret for them, are points well and duly settled and accounted for, by ancient and modern physiologists.

A water-drinker, provided he is a profess'd one, and does it without fraud or covin, is precisely in the same predicament: Not that, at first sight, there is any consequence, or show of logic in it, "That a rill of cold water dribbling thro' my inward parts, should light up a torch in my Jenny's——"

——The proposition does not strike one; on the contrary, it seems to run opposite to the natural workings of causes and effects——

But it shows the weakness and imbecility of human reason,

——"And in perfect good health with it?"

—The most perfect—madam, that friendship herself could wish me—

—"And drink nothing!—nothing but water?"

—Impetuous fluid! the moment thou pressest against the flood-gates of the brain——see how they give way!

In swims CURIOSITY, beckoning to her damsels to follow—they dive into the centre of the current.

FANCY sits musing upon the bank, and, with her eyes following the stream, turns straws and bulrushes into masts and bowsprits—And DESIRE, with vest held up to the knee in one hand, snatches at them, as they swim by her, with the other.

O ye water-drinkers! is it then by this delusive fountain that ye have so often governed and turn'd this world about like a mill-wheel—grinding the faces of the impotent—be-powdering their

ribs.....be-peppering their noses, and changing sometimes even the very frame and face of Nature ?.....

—If I was you, quoth Yorick, I would drink more water, Eugenius——And if I was you, Yorick, replied Eugenius, so would I.

Which shows they have both read Longinus—For my own part, I am resolved never to read any book but my own, as long as I live.

## CHAP. VI.

I WISH my uncle Toby had been a water-drinker; for then the thing had been accounted for, That the first moment Widow Wadman saw him, she felt something stirring within her in his favor——Something !——something.

—Something, perhaps more than friendship—less than love—something—no matter what—no matter where—I would not give a single hair of my mule's tail, and be obliged to pluck it off myself (indeed the villain has not many to spare, and is not a little vicious into the bargain) to be let by your worships into the secret——

But the truth is, my uncle Toby was not a water drinker; he drank it neither pure nor mix'd, or any how, or any where, except fortuitously, upon some advanced posts, where better liquor was not to be had—or during the time he was under cure, when the surgeon telling him it would extend the fibres, and bring them sooner into contact—my uncle Toby drank it for quietness sake.

Now, as all the world knows, that no effect in nature can be produced without a cause; and as it is as well known, that my uncle Toby was neither a weaver—a gardener—or a gladiator—unless as a captain, you will needs have him one—but then he was only a captain of foot—and besides, the whole is an equivocation, . . . there is nothing left for us to suppose, but that my uncle Toby's leg—but that will avail us little in the present hypothesis, unless it had proceeded from some ailment in the foot, . . . whereas, his leg was not emaciated from any disorder in his foot—for my uncle Toby's leg was not emaciated at all. It was a little stiff and awkward, from a total disuse of it, for the three years he lay confined at my father's house in town; but it was plump and muscular, and, in all other respects, as good and promising a leg as the other.

I declare, I do not recollect any one opinion or passage of my life, where my understanding was more at a loss to make ends meet, and torture the chapter I had been writing to the service of the chapter following it, than in the present case; One would think I took a pleasure in running into difficulties of this kind, merely to make fresh experiments of getting out of 'em—Inconsiderate soul that thou art! What! are not the unavoidable distresses with which, as an author and a man, thou art hemm'd in on every side of thee—are they, Tristram, not sufficient, but thou must entangle thyself still more?

Is it not enough that thou art in debt, and that thou hast ten cart loads of thy fifth and sixth volumes still—still unsold, and art almost at thy wit's end how to get them off thy hands?

To this hour, art thou not tormented with the vile asthma thou gattest in skating against the wind in Flanders? and it is but two months ago, that, in a fit of laughter, on seeing a cardinal make water like a choirister (with both hands) thou breakedst a vessel in thy lungs, whereby, in two hours, thou lost as many quarts of blood; and hadst thou lost as much more, did not the faculty tell thee —it would have amounted to a gallon?.....

## CHAP. VII.

.....BUT, for heaven's sake, let us not talk of quarts or gallons..... let us take the story straight before us; it is so nice and intricate a one, it will scarce bear the transposition of a single tittle; and, somehow or other, you have got me thrust almost into the middle of it.....

.....I beg we may take more care.

## CHAP. VIII.

MY uncle Toby and the Corporal had posted down with so much heat and precipitation, to take possession of the spot of ground we have so often spoke of, in order to open their campaign as early as the rest of the allies, that they forgot one of the most necessary articles of the whole affair; it was neither a pioneer's spade, a pickaxe, or a shovel.....

—It was a bed to lie on: So that, as Shandy Hall was at that time unfurnished, and the little

inn where poor Le Fevre died, not yet built; my uncle Toby was constrained to accept of a bed at Mrs. Wadman's, for a night or two, till Corporal Trim, (who, to the character of an excellent valet, groom, cook, sempster, surgeon, and engineer, superadded that of an excellent upholsterer too) with the help of a carpenter and a couple of taylors, constructed one in my uncle Toby's house.

A daughter of Eve, for such was widow Wadman, and 'tis all the character I intend to give of her—

—" That she was a perfect woman;"
had better be fifty leagues off—or in her warm bed—or playing with a case-knife—or any thing you please—than make a man the object of her attention, when the house, and all the furniture, is her own.

There is nothing in it out of doors, and in broad day-light, where a woman has a power, physically speaking, of viewing a man in more lights than one—but here, for her soul, she can see him in no light, without mixing something of her own goods and chattles along with him—till, by reiterated acts of such combinations, he gets foisted into her inventory—

—And then good night.

But this is not matter of SYSTEM; for I have delivered that above—nor is it matter of BREVIARY.....for I make no man's creed but my own..... nor matter of FACT.....at least that I know of; but 'tis matter copulative and introductory to what follows.

## CHAP. IX.

I DO not speak it with regard to the coarseness or cleanness of them—or the strength of their gussets—but pray, do not night-shifts differ from day-shifts, as much in this particular as in any thing else in the world—that they so far exceed the others in length, that when you are laid down in them, they fall almost as much below the feet, as the day-shifts fall short of them?

Widow Wadman's night-shifts (as was the mode I suppose in King William's and Queen nne Anne's reigns) were cut however after thisfashion; and if the fashion is changed, (for in Italy they are come to nothing)—so much the worse for the public, they were two Flemish ells and a half in length; so that, allowing a moderate woman two ells, she had half an ell to spare, to do what she would with.

Now, from one little indulgence gain'd after another, in the many bleak and Decemberly nights of a seven years widowhood, things had insensibly come to this pass, and, for the two last years, had got establish'd into one of the ordinances of the bed-chamber.....That as soon as Mrs. Wadman was put to bed, and had got her legs stretched down to the bottom of it, of which she always gave Bridget notice.....Bridget, with all suitable decorum, having first opened the bed-clothes at the feet, took hold of the half ell of cloth we are speaking of, and having gently, and with both her hands, drawn it downwards to its farthest extension, and then contracted it again side-long by four or five even plaits, she took a large corking pin out of

her sleeve, and, with the point directed towards her, pinn'd the plaits all fast together a little above the hem; which done, she tuck'd all in tight at the feet, and wish'd her mistress a good night.

This was constant, and without any other variation than this, that, on shivering and tempestuous nights, when Bridget untuck'd the feet of the bed, &c. to do this—she consulted no thermometer but that of her own passions; and so performed it standing.....kneeling.....or squatting, according to the different degrees of faith, hope, and charity, she was in, and bore towards her mistress that night.—In every other respect, the etiquette was sacred, and might have vied with the most mechanical one of the most inflexible bedchamber in Christendom.

The first night, as soon as the Corporal had conducted my uncle Toby up stairs, which was about ten—Mrs. Wadman threw herself into her armchair, and crossing her left knee with her right, which formed a resting-place for her elbow, she reclined her cheek upon the palm of her hand, and leaning forwards, ruminated till midnight upon both sides of the question.

The second night she went to her bureau, and having ordered Bridget to bring her up a couple of fresh candles, and leave them upon the table, she took out her marriage settlement, and read it over with great devotion: And the third night (which was the last of my uncle Toby's stay) when Bridget had pull'd down the night-shift, and was essaying to stick in the corking-pin.....With a kick of both heels at once, but, at the same time, the most natural kick that could be kick'd in her situation.....for supposing ********* to be the sun in its meridian, it was a north-east kick—

she kicked the pin out of her fingers; the etiquette, which hung upon it, down—down it fell to the ground, and was shivered into a thousand atoms.

From all which it was plain, that widow Wadman was in love with my uncle Toby.

## CHAP. X.

MY uncle Toby's head, at that time, was full of other matters, so that it was not till the demolition of Dunkirk, when all other civilities of Europe were settled, that he found leisure to return this.

This made an armistice (that is, speaking with regard to my uncle Toby—but, with respect to Mrs. Wadman, a vacancy).....of almost eleven years. But in all cases of this nature, as it is the second blow, happen at what distance of time it will, which makes the fray.....I choose, for that reason, to call these the amours of my uncle Toby with Mrs. Wadman, rather than the amours of Mrs. Wadman with my uncle Toby.

This is not a distinction without a difference.—It is not like the affair of an old hat cock'd—and a cock'd old hat, about which your reverences have so often been at odds with one another—but there is a difference here in the nature of things.....

And let me tell you, gentry, a wide one too.

## CHAP. XI.

NOW, as widow Wadman did love my uncle Toby.....and my uncle Toby did not love widow Wadman, there was nothing for widow

Wadman to do, but to go on and love my uncle Toby—or let it alone.

Widow Wadman would do neither the one or the other.———

—Gracious heaven!—but I forget I am a little of her temper myself; for whenever it so falls out, which it sometimes does about the equinoxes, that an earthly goddess is so much this, and that, and t'other, that I cannot eat my breakfast for her—and that she careth not three halfpence whether I eat my breakfast or no—

—Curse on her! and so I send her to Tartary; and from Tartary to Terra del Fuego, and so on to the devil: In short, there is not an infernal niche where I do not take her divinityship and stick it.

But as the heart is tender, and the passions, in these tides, ebb and flow ten times in a minute, I instantly bring her back again; and, as I do all things in extremes, I place her in the very centre of the milky way—

Brightest of stars! thou wilt shed thy influence upon some one—

—The deuce take her and her influence too—for at that word I lose all patience—much good may it do him!—By all that is hirsute and ghastly I cry, taking off my furr'd cap, and twisting it round my finger—I would not give sixpence for a dozen such!

—But it is an excellent cap too (putting it upon my head, and pressing it close to my ears)—and *warm*—and soft: Especially if you stroke it the

right way—but alas! that will never be my luck—(so here my philosophy is shipwreck'd again)—

—No; I shall never have a finger in the pye (so here I break my metaphor)—

Crust and crumb—

Inside and out—

Top and bottom—I detest it, I hate it, I repudiate it—I'm sick at the sight of it,.....

'Tis all pepper,

garlic,

staragen,

salt, and

devil's dung—By the great arch cook of cooks, who does nothing, I think, from morning to night, but sit down by the fire-side and invent inflammatory dishes for us, I would not touch it for the world.....

—O Tristram! Tristram! cried Jenny.

O Jenny! Jenny! replied I, and so went on with the twelfth chapter.

## CHAP. XII.

—"NOT touch it for the world," did I say?—Lord, how I have heated my imagination with this metaphor.

## CHAP. XIII.

WHICH shows, let your reverences and worships say what you will of it (for as for thinking——all who do think.....think pretty much alike, both upon it and other matters)—LOVE is *certainly*, at least alphabetically speaking, *one of the* most

A gitating
B ewitching
C onfounded
D evilish affairs of life——the most
E xtravagant
F utilious
G alligaskinish
H andydandyish
I racundulous (there is no K to it) and
L yrical of all human passions: At the same time, the most
M isgiving
N innyhammering
O bstipating
P sagmatical
S tridulous
R idiculous, though, by the bye, the R should have gone first——But in short, 'tis of such a nature, as my father once told my uncle Toby, upon the close of a long dissertation upon the subject—"You can scarce," said he, "combine two ideas "together upon it, brother Toby, without an hy"pallage"—What's that? cried my uncle Toby.—The cart before the horse, replied my father—

——And what has he to do there? cried my uncle Toby——

Nothing, quoth my father, but to get in—or let it alone.

Now, widow Wadman, as I told you before, would do neither the one or the other.

She stood, however, ready harnessed and caparisoned at all points, to watch accidents.

## CHAP. XIV.

THE Fates, who certainly all foreknew of these amours of widow Wadman and my cle Toby, had, from the first creation of matter d motion (and with more courtesy than they ually do things of this kind) established such a ain of causes and effects, hanging so fast to one ther, that it was scarce possible for my uncle by to have dwelt in any other house in the rld, or to have occupied any other garden in ristendom, but the very house and garden ich join'd and lay parallel to Mrs. Wadman's; s, with the advantage of a thickset arbor in rs. Wadman's garden, but planted in the hedge-w, of my uncle Toby's, put all the occasions o her hands which Love militancy wanted; she uld observe my uncle Toby's motions, and was stress likewise of his councils of war; and as unsuspecting heart had given leave to the rporal, through the mediation of Bridget, to ake her a wicker gate of communication to en-ge her walks, it enabled her to carry on her proaches to the very door of the sentry-box; d sometimes out of gratitude, to make the at-k, and endeavor to blow my uncle Toby up in very centry-box itself.

## CHAP. XV.

T is a great pity——but 'tis certain from every day's observation of man, that he may be set fire like a candle at either end—provided there

is a sufficient wick standing out; if there is not —there's an end of the affair; and if there is—by lighting it at the bottom, as the flame, in that case, has the misfortune generally to put out itself—there's an end of the affair again.

For my part, could I always have the ordering of it which way I would be burnt myself—for I cannot bear the thoughts of being burnt like a beast—I would oblige a housewife constantly to light me at the top; for then I should burn down decently to the socket; that is, from my hand to my heart, from my heart to my liver, from my liver to my bowels, and so on by the meseraic veins and arteries, through all the turns and lateral insertions of the intestines and their tunicles, to the blind gut——

——I beseech you, doctor Slop, quoth my uncle Toby, interrupting him as he mentioned the blind gut, in a discourse with my father the night my mother was brought to bed of me—I beseech you, quoth my uncle Toby, to tell me which is the blind gut; for, old as I am, I avow I do not know to this day where it lies.

The blind gut, answered doctor Slop, lies betwixt the Ilion and Colon—

—In a man? said my father.

—'Tis precisely the same, cried doctor Slop, in a woman————

That's more than I know, quoth my father.

## CHAP. XVI.

——AND so, to make sure of both systems, Mrs. Wadman predetermined to light my uncle Toby neither at this end or that; but like a prodigal's candle, to light him, if possible at both ends at once.

Now, thro' all the lumber rooms of military furniture, including both of horse and foot, from the great arsenal of Venice to the tower of London (exclusive) if Mrs. Wadman had been rummaging for seven years together, and with Bridget to help her, she could not have found any one blind or mantelet so fit for her purpose, as that which the expediency of my uncle Toby's affairs had fix'd up ready to her hands.

I believe I have not told you—but I don't know ——possibly I have——be it as it will, 'tis one of the number of those many things, which a man had better do over again, than dispute about it ——That whatever town or fortress the Corporal was at work upon, during the course of their campaign, my uncle Toby always took care, on the inside of his centry-box, which was towards his left hand, to have a plan of the place, fasten'd up with two or three pins at the top, but loose at the bottom, for the conveniency of holding it up to the eye, &c.——as occasions required; so that when an attack was resolved upon, Mrs. Wadman had nothing more to do, when she had got advanced to the door of the centry-box, but to extend her right hand; and, edging in her left foot at the same movement, to take hold of the map or plan, or upright, or whatever it was, and,

with outstretched neck meeting it half way,—— to advance it towards her; on which my uncle Toby's passions were sure to catch fire—for he would instantly take hold of the other corner of the map in his left hand, and with the end of his pipe, in the other, begin an explanation.

When the attack was advanced to this point; ——the world will naturally enter into the reasons of Mrs. Wadman's next stroke of generalship——which was, to take my uncle Toby's tobacco-pipe out of his hand as soon as she possibly could; which, under one pretence or other, but generally that of pointing more distinctly at some re-doubt or breast-work in the map, she would effect, before my uncle Toby (poor soul!) had well march'd above half a dozen toises with it. ——It obliged my uncle Toby to make use of his forefinger.

The difference it made in the attack was this; That in going upon it, as in the first case, with the end of her forefinger against the end of my uncle Toby's tobaco-pipe, she might have travelled with it, along the lines, from Dan to Beersheba, had my uncle Toby's lines reach'd so far without any effect: For, as there was no arterial or vital heat in the end of the tobaco-pipe, it could excite no sentiment——it could neither give fire by pulsation——or receive it by sympathy——'twas nothing but smoke.

Whereas, in following my uncle Toby's forefinger with her's, close thro' all the little turns and indentings of his works——pressing sometimes against the side of it——then treading upon its nail——then tripping it up——then touching it here——then there, and so on——it set something at least in motion.

This, tho' slight skirmishing, and at a distance from the main body, yet drew on the rest; for here, the map usually falling with the back of it close to the side of the sentry-box, my uncle Toby, in the simplicity of his soul, would lay his hand flat upon it, in order to go on with his explanation; and Mrs. Wadman, by a monœuvre as quick as thought, would as certainly place her's close beside it: This at once opened a communication, large enough for any sentiment to pass or repass, which a person skill'd in the elementary and practical part of love-making, has occasion for———

By bringing up her forefinger parallel (as before) to my uncle Toby's———it unavoidably brought the thumb into action——and the forefinger and thumb being once engaged, as naturally brought in the whole hand. Thine, dear uncle Toby! was never now in its right place—Mrs. Wadman had it ever to take up, or with the gentlest pushings, protrusions, and equivocal compressions, that a hand to be removed is capable of receiving——to get it press'd a hair's breadth of one side out of her way.

Whilst this was doing, how could she forget to make him sensible, that it was her leg (and no one's else) at the bottom of the sentry-box, which slightly press'd against the calf of his——So that my uncle Toby being thus attacked and sore push'd on both his wings——was it a wonder, if, now and then, it put his centre into disorder?

———The duce take it! said my uncle Toby.

## CHAP. XVII.

THESE attacks of Mrs. Wadman, you will readily conceive to be of different kinds; varying from each other, like the attacks which history is full of, and from the same reasons. A general looker on, would scarce allow them to be attacks at all——or, if he did, would confound them altogether——but I write not to them: It will be time enough to be a little more exact in my descriptions of them, as I come up to them, which will not be for some chapters; having nothing more to add in this, but that in a bundle of original papers and drawings, which my father took care to roll up by themselves, there is a plan of Bouchain in perfect preservation (and shall be kept so, whilst I have power to preserve any thing) upon the lower corner of which, on the right-hand side, there are still remaining the marks of a snuffy finger and thumb, which, there is all the reason in the world to imagine, were Mrs. Wadman's; for the opposite side of the margin, which I suppose to have been my uncle Toby's, is absolutely clean. This seems an authenticated record of one of these attacks; for there are vestigia of the two punctures partly grown up, but still visible on the opposite corner of the map, which are unquestionably the very hole through which it has been pricked up in the sentry-box——

By all that is priestly! I value this precious relic, with its stigmata and prick, more than all the relics of the Romish church——always excepting, when I am writing upon these matters, the pricks which enter'd the flesh of St. Rada-

gunda in the desert, which, in your road from FESSE to CLUNY, the nuns of that name will show you for love.

## CHAP. XVIII.

I THINK, an' please your honor, quoth Trim, the fortifications are quite destroyed——— and the bason is upon a level with the mole——— I think so too; replied my uncle Toby, with a sigh half suppress'd——but step into the parlor, Trim, for the stipulation——it lies upon the table.

It has lain there these six weeks, replied the Corporal, till this very morning that the old woman kindled the fire with it.

——Then, said my uncle Toby, there is no farther occasion for our services. The more, an' please your honor, the pity, said the Corporal; in uttering which, he cast his spade into the wheel-barrow, which was beside him, with an air the most expressive of disconsolation that can be imagined, and was heavily turning about to look for his pickaxe, his pioneer's shovel, his piquets and other little military stores, in order to carry them off the field—when a heighho! from the sentry-box, which, being made of thin sleat deal, reverberated the sound more sorrowfully to his ear, forbade him.

——No; said the Corporal to himslf, I'll do it before his honor rises to-morrow morning; so taking his spade out of the wheel-barrow again, with a little earth in it, as if to level something at the foot of the glacis——but with a real in-

tent to approach nearer to his master, in order to divert him—he loosed a sod or two——pared their edges with his spade, and having given them a gentle blow or two with the back of it, he sat himself down close by my uncle Toby's feet, and began as follows.

## CHAP. XIX.

IT was a thousand pities—though I believe, an' please your honor, I am going to say but a foolish kind of a thing for a soldier.

A soldier, cried my uncle Toby, interrupting the Corporal, is no more exempt from saying a foolish thing, Trim, than a man of letters—— But not so often; an' please your honor, replied the Corporal—My uncle Toby gave a nod.

It was a thousand pities, then, said the Corporal, casting his eye upon Dunkirk, and the mole, as Servius Sulpicius, in returning out of Asia (when he sailed from Ægina towards Megara) did upon Corinth and Pyræus——

—"It was a thousand pities, an' please your honor, to destroy these works——and a thousand pities to have let them stand."

—Thou art right, Trim, in both cases; said my uncle Toby.—This, continued the Corporal, is the reason, that from the beginning of their demolition to the end—I have never once whistled, or sung, or laugh'd, or cry'd, or talk'd of past done deeds, or told your honor one story good or bad——

——Thou hast many excellencies, Trim, said my uncle Toby; and I hold it not the least of them, as thou happenest to be a story-teller, that of the number thou hast told me, either to amuse

me in my painful hours, or divert me in my grave ones—thou hast seldom told me a bad one——

—Because an' please your honor, except one of a King of Bohemia and his seven castles,—— they are all true; for they are about myself——

I do not like the subject the worse, Trim, said my uncle Toby, on that score: But prithee, what is this story?—thou hast excited my curiosity.

I'll tell it your honor, quoth the Corporal, directly—Provided, said my uncle Toby, looking earnestly towards Dunkirk and the mole again—provided it is not a merry one; to such, Trim, a man should ever bring one half of the entertainment along with him; and the disposition I am in at present would wrong both thee, Trim, and thy story.——It is not a merry one by any means, replied the Corporal.———Nor would I have it altogether a grave one; added my uncle Toby.—It is neither the one nor the other, replied the Corporal, but will suit your honor exactly.—Then I'll thank thee for it with all my heart, cried my uncle Toby,—so prithee begin it, Trim.

The Corporal made his reverence, and though it is not so easy a matter as the world imagines, to pull off a lank Montero cap with grace—or a whit less difficult, in my conception, when a man is sitting squat upon the ground, to make a bow so teeming with respect as the Corporal was wont; yet, by suffering the palm of his right hand, which was towards his master, to slip backwards upon the grass, a little beyond his body, in order to allow it the greater sweep——and by an unforced compression, at the same time, of his cap, with the thumb and the two forefingers of the left, by which the diameter of the cap became

reduced, so that it might be said, rather to be insensibly squeez'd—than pulled off with a flatus—the Corporal acquitted himself of both, in a better manner than the posture of his affairs promised; and having hemmed twice, to find in what key his story would best go, and best suit his master's humor—he exchanged a single look of kindness with him, and set off thus.

The story of the King of Bohemia and his seven castles.

THERE was a certain king of Bo—he—— As the Corporal was entering the confines of Bohemia, my uncle Toby obliged him to halt for a single moment; he had set out bare-headed, having, since he pull'd off his Montero cap in the latter end of the last chapter, left it lying beside him on the ground.

—The eye of goodness espieth all things—— so that, before the Corporal had well got through the first five words of his story, had my uncle Toby twice touch'd his Montero cap with the end of his cane, interrogatively——as much as to say, Why don't you put it on, Trim?—Trim took it up with the most respectful slowness, and casting a glance of humiliation as he did it, upon the embroidery of the fore part, which being dismally tarnish'd and fray'd moreover in some of the principal leaves and boldest parts of the pattern, he lay'd it down again betwixt his two feet, in order to moralize upon the subject.

—'Tis every word of it but too true, cried my uncle Toby, that thou art about to observe——

"Nothing in this world, Trim, is made to last "for ever."

—But when tokens, dear Tom, of thy love and remembrance wear out, said Trim, what shall we say?

There is no occasion, Trim, quoth my uncle Toby, to say any thing else; and was a man to puzzle his brains till doom's-day, I believe, Trim, it would be impossible.

The Corporal perceiving my uncle Toby was in the right, and that it would be in vain for the wit of man to think of extracting a purer moral from his cap, without farther attempting it, he put it on; and passing his hand across his forehead to rub out a pensive wrinkle, which the text and the doctrine between them had engender'd, he return'd, with the same look and tone of voice, to his story of the king of Bohemia and his seven castles.

## The story of the King of Bohemia and his seven castles, continued.

THERE was a certain king of Bohemia, but in whose reign, except his own, I am not able to inform your honor——

I do not desire it of thee, Trim, by any means, cried my uncle Toby.

—It was a little before the time, an' please your honor, when giants were beginning to leave off breeding;——but in what year of our Lord that was——

——I would not give a half penny to know, said my uncle Toby.

——Only, an' please your honor, it makes a story look the better in the face——

——'Tis thy own, Trim, so ornament it after thy own fashion; and take any date, continued my uncle Toby, looking pleasantly upon him—take any date in the whole world thou choosest, and put it to—thou art heartily welcome.

The Corporal bowed; for of every century, and of every year of that century, from the first creation of the world down to Noah's flood; and from Noah's flood to the birth of Abraham; through all the pilgrimages of the patriarchs, to the departure of the Israelites out of Egypt—and throughout all the Dynasties, Olympiads, Urbecondita's, and other memorable epochas of the different nations of the world down to the coming of Christ, and from thence to the very moment in which the Corporal was telling his story—had my uncle Toby subjected this vast empire of time and all its abysses at his feet; but as MODESTY scarce touches with a finger what LIBERALITY offers her with both hands open—the Corporal contented himself with the very worst year of the whole bunch; which, to prevent your honors of the majority and minority from tearing the very flesh off your bones in contestation, 'Whether that year is not always the last-cast year of the last-cast almanac,' I tell you plainly it was, but from a different reason than you wot of———

——It was the year next him———which being the year of our Lord seventeen hundred and twelve, when the Duke of Ormond was playing the devil in Flanders——the Corporal took it, and set out with it afresh on his expedition to Bohemia.

## The story of the King of Bohemia and his seven castles, continued.

IN the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and twelve, there was, an' please your honor———

—To tell thee truly, Trim, quoth my uncle Toby, any other date would have pleased me much better, not only on account of the sad stain upon our history that year, in marching off our troops, and refusing to cover the siege of Quesnoi, though Fagel was carrying on the works with such incredible vigor———but likewise on the score, Trim, of thy own story; because if there are—and which from what thou hast dropt, I partly suspect to be the fact—if there are giants in it———

—There is but one, an' please your honor—

———'Tis as bad as twenty, replied my uncle Toby——thou should'st have carried him back some seven or eight hundred years out of harm's way, both of critic and other people; and therefore I would advise thee, if ever thou tellest it again———

If I live, an' please your honor, but once to get thro' it, I will never tell it again, quoth Trim, either to man, woman or child——Poo—poo! said my uncle Toby—but with accents of such sweet encouragement did he utter it, that the Corporal went on with his story with more alacrity than ever.

The story of the King of Bohemia and his seven castles, continued.

THERE was, an' please your honor, said the Corporal, raising his voice and rubbing the palms of his two hands cheerily together as he began, a certain king of Bohemia——

—Leave out the date entirely, Trim, quoth my uncle Toby, leaning forwards, and laying his hand gently upon the Corporal's shoulder to temper the interruption——leave it out entirely, Trim; a story passes very well without these niceties, unless one is pretty sure of 'em—Sure of 'em! said the Corporal, shaking his head——

Right; answered my uncle Toby, it is not easy, Trim, for one, bred up as thou and I have been to arms, who seldom looks farther forward than to the end of his musket, or backwards beyond his knapsack, to know much about this matter.—God bless your honor, said the Corporal, won by the manner of my uncle Toby's reasoning, as much as by the reasoning itself, he has something else to do; if not on action, or a march, or upon duty in his garrison—he has his firelock, an' please your honor, to furbish——his accoutrements to take care of—his regimentals to mend—himself to shave and keep clean, so as to appear always like what he is upon the parade; what business, added the Corporal triumphantly, has a soldier, an' please your honor, to know any thing at all of geography?

—Thou would'st have said chronology, Trim, said my uncle Toby; for, as for geography, 'tis of absolute use to him; he must be acquainted intimately with every country and its boundaries where his profession carries him; he should know

every-town and city, and village, and hamlet, with the canals, the roads, and hollow ways which lead up to them; there is not a river or rivulet he passes, Trim, but he should be able at first sight to tell thee what is its name——in what mountains it takes its rise——what is its course ——how far it is navigable——where fordable—— where not; he should know the fertility of every valley, as well as the hind who ploughs it; and be able to describe, or, if it is required to give thee an exact map of all the plains, and defiles, the forts, the acclivities, the woods and morasses, through and by which his army is to march: He should know their produce, their plants, their minerals, their waters, their animals, their seasons, their climates, their heats and cold, their inhabitants, their customs, their language, their policy, and even their religion.

Is it else to be conceived, Corporal, continued my uncle Toby, rising up in his sentry-box, as he began to warm in this part of his discourse—how Marlborough could have marched his army from the banks of the Maes to Belburg; from Belburgh to Kerpenord—(here the Corporal could sit no longer) from Kerpenord, Trim, to Kalsaken; from Kalsaken to Newdorf; from Newdorf to Landenbourg; from Landenbourg to Mildenheim; from Mildenheim to Elchingen; from Elchingen to Gingen; from Gingen to Balmerchoffen; from Balmerchoffen to Skellenbourgh, where he broke in upon the enemy's works; forced his passage over the Danube; cross'd the Lech—pushed on his troops into the heart of the empire, marching at the head of them through Friburgh, Hockenwert, and Schonevelt, to the plains of Blenheim and Hockstet?——Great as he was, Corporal, he could not have advanced a step, or made one single day's march without the

aids of Geography——As for Chronology——I own, Trim, continued my uncle Toby, sitting down again coolly in his sentry-box, that, of all others, it seems a science which a soldier might best spare, was it not for the lights which that science must one day give him, in determining the invention of powder; the furious execution of which, renversing every thing like thunder before it, has become a new æra to us of military improvements, changing so totally the nature of attack and defences both by sea and land, and awakening so much art and skill in doing it, that the world cannot be too exact in ascertaining the precise time of its discovery, or too inquisitive in knowing what great man was the discoverer, and what occasions gave birth to it.

I am far from controverting, continued my uncle Toby, what historians agree in, that in the year of our Lord one thousand three hundred and eighty, under the reign of Wencelaus son of Charles the fourth,—a certain priest, whose name was Schwartz, show'd the use of powder to the Venetians, in their wars against the Genoese; but, 'tis certain he was not the first; because if we are to believe Don Pedro, the bishop of Leon ——How came priests and bishops, an' please your honor, to trouble their heads so much about gun-powder? God knows, said my uncle Toby ——his providence brings good out of every thing —and he avers in his chronicle of king Alphonsus, who reduced Toledo, that in the year one thousand three hundred and forty three, which was full thirty-seven years before that time, the secret of powder was well known, and employed with success, both by Moors and Christians, not only in their sea-combats, at that period, but in many of their most memorable seiges in Spain and Barbary——And all the world knows, that

Friar Bacon had wrote expressly about it, and had generously given the world a receipt to make it by, above a hundred and fifty years before even Schwartz was born—and that the Chinese, added my uncle Toby, embarrass us, and all accounts of it still more, by boasting of the invention some hundreds of years even before him——

—They are a pack of liars, I believe, cried Trim.

—They are somehow or other deceived, said my uncle Toby, in this matter, as is plain to me from the present miserable state of military architecture amongst them; which consists of nothing more than a fosse, with a brick wall without flanks—and, for what they give us as a bastion at each angle of it, 'tis so barbarously constructed, that it looks for all the world like one of my seven castles, an' please your honor, quoth Trim.

My uncle Toby, though in the utmost distress for a comparison, most courteously refused Trim's offer—till Trim telling him, he had half a dozen more in Bohemia, which he knew not how to get off his hands——my uncle Toby was so touch'd with the pleasantry of heart of the Corporal——that he discontinued his dissertation upon gun-powder—and begged the Corporal forthwith to go on with his story of the King of Bohemia and his seven castles.

## The story of the King of Bohemia and his seven castles, continued.

THIS unfortunate king of Bohemia, said Trim ——Was he unfortunate then? cried my uncle Toby, for he had been so wrapt up in his dissertation upon gun-powder, and other military

affairs, that though he had desired the Corporal to go on, yet the many interruptions he had given, dwelt not so strong upon his fancy as to account for the epithet——Was he unfortunate then, Trim? said my uncle Toby, pathetically—The Corporal, wishing first the word and all its synonymas at the devil, forthwith began to run back in his mind, the principal events in the king of Bohemia's story, from every one of which, it appearing that he was the most fortunate man that ever existed in the world—it put the Corporal to a stand; for not caring to retract his epithet—and less, to explain it—and, least of all, to twist his tail (like men of lore) to serve a system—he looked up in my uncle Toby's face for assistance—but seeing it was the very thing my uncle Toby sat in expectation of himself—after a hum and a haw, he went on——

The king of Bohemia, an' please your honor, replied the Corporal, was unfortunate, as thus—That taking great pleasure and delight in navigation, and all sort of sea affairs—and there happening throughout the whole kingdom of Bohemia, to be no sea-port town whatever——

How the deuce should there?—Trim? cried my uncle Toby; for Bohemia being totally inland, it could have happen'd no otherwise——It might; said Trim, if it had pleased God——

My uncle Toby never spoke of the being and natural attributes of God, but with diffidence and hesitation——

I believe not, replied my uncle Toby, after some pause——for being inland, as I said, and having Silesia and Moravia to the east; Lusatia and Upper Saxony to the north; Franconia to the west;

and Bavaria to the south—Bohemia could not have been propell'd to the sea, without ceasing to be Bohemia—nor could the sea, on the other hand, have come up to Bohemia, without overflowing a great part of Germany, and destroying millions of unfortunate inhabitants who could make no defence against it—Scandalous! cried Trim—Which would bespeak, added my uncle Toby, mildly, such a want of compassion in him who is the father of it—that, I think, Trim—the thing could have happen'd no way.

The Corporal made the bow of unfeigned conviction; and went on.

Now, the king of Bohemia, with his queen and courtiers, happening one fine summer's evening to walk out——Aye! there the word *happening* is right, Trim, cried my uncle Toby; for the king of Bohemia and his queen might have walk'd out or let it alone; 'twas a matter of contingency, which might happen or not, just as chance ordered it.

King William was of opinion, an' please your honor, quoth Trim, that every thing was predestined for us in this world; insomuch, that he would often say to his soldiers, "that every ball "had its billet." He was a great man said my uncle Toby—And I believe, continued Trim, to this day, that the shot which disabled me at the battle of Landen, was pointed at my knee for no other purpose, but to take me out of his service, and place me in your honor's where I should be taken so much better care of in my old age——It shall never, Trim, be construed otherwise, said my uncle Toby.

The heart, both of the master and the man, were alike subject to sudden overflowings ;——a short silence ensued.

Besides, said the Corporal, resuming the discourse—but in a gayer accent—if it had not been for that single shot, I had never, an' please your honor, been in love———

So thou wast once in love, Trim! said my uncle Toby, smiling———.

Souse! replied the Corporal—over head and ears! an' please your honor. Prithee when? where!—and how came it to pass?—I never heard one word of it before, quoth my uncle Toby.—I dare say, answered Trim, that every drummer and serjeant's son in the regiment knew of it.—'Tis high time I should—said my uncle Toby.

Your honor remembers with concern, said the Corporal, the total route and confusion of our camp and army, at the affair of Landen ; every one was left to shift for himself; and if it had not been for the regiments of Wyndham, Lumley, and Galway, which covered the retreat over the bridge of Neerspecken, the king himself could scarce have gain'd it—he was press'd hard, as your honor knows, on every side of him———.

Gallant mortal! cried my uncle Toby, caught up with enthusiasm—this moment, now that all is lost, I see him galloping across me, Corporal, to the left, to bring up the remains of the English horse along with him to support the right, and tear the laurel from Luxembourg's brows, if yet 'tis possible—I see him with the knot of his scarf just shot off, infusing fresh spirits into poor Galway's regiment—riding along the line,—then

wheeling about, and charging. Conti at the head of it—Brave! brave, by heaven! cried my uncle Toby—he deserves a crown—as richly as a thief a halter!! shouted Trim.

My uncle Toby knew the Corporal's loyalty;—otherwise the comparison was not at all to his mind:—It did not altogether strike the Corporal's fancy when he had made it—but it could not be recall'd——so he had nothing to do, but proceed——

As the number of wounded was prodigious, and no one had time to think of any thing, but his own safety.—Though Talmash, said my uncle Toby, brought off the foot with great prudence—but I was left upon the field, said the Corporal. Thou wast so, poor fellow! replied my uncle Toby——So that it was noon the next day, continued the Corporal, before I was exchanged, and put into a cart with thirteen or fourteen more, in order to be convey'd to our hospital——

There is no part of the body, an' please your honor, where a wound occasions more intolerable anguish than upon the knee——

Except the groin; said my uncle Toby.—An' please your honor, replied the Corporal, the knee, in my opinion, must certainly be the most acute, there being so many tendons, and what-d'ye-call-'ems all about it.

It is for that reason, quoth my uncle Toby, that the groin is infinitely more sensible——there being not only as many tendons and what-d'ye-call-'ems (for I know their names as little as thou do'st)—about it—but moreover ***

Mrs. Wadman, who had been all the time in her arbor——instantly stopp'd her breath—unpinn'd her mob at the chin, and stood upon one leg——

The dispute was maintained with amicable and equal force betwixt my uncle Toby and Trim for some time; till Trim at length recollecting that he had often cried at his master's sufferings, but never shed a tear at his own—was for giving up the point, which my uncle Toby would not allow——'Tis a proof of nothing, Trim, said he, but the generosity of thy temper——

So that whether the pain of a wound in the groin (cæteris parribus) is greater than the pain of a wound in the knee——or——

Whether the pain of a wound in the knee is not greater than the pain of a wound in the groin —are points which to this day remain unsettled.

## CHAP. XX.

THE anguish of my knee, continued the Corporal, was excessive in itself; and the uneasiness of the cart, with the roughness of the roads, which were terribly cut up—making bad still worse—every step was death to me: So that with the loss of blood, and the want of care taking of me, and a fever I felt coming on besides —(Poor soul! said my uncle Toby)—all together, an' please your honor, was more than I could sustain.

I was telling my sufferings to a young woman at a peasant's house, where our cart, which was

the last of the line, had halted ; they had help'd me in ; and the young woman had taken a cordial out of her pocket and dropp'd it upon some sugar, and seeing it had cheer'd me, she had given it me a second and a third time—So I was telling her, an' please your honor, the anguish I was in, and was saying it was so intolerable to me, that I had much rather lie down upon the bed, turning my face towards one which was in the corner of the room——and die, than go on—when, upon her attempting to lead me to it, I fainted away in her arms. She was a good soul ! as your honor, said the Corporal, wiping his eyes, will hear.

I thought love had been a joyous thing, quoth my uncle Toby.

'Tis the most serious thing, an' please your honor (sometimes) that is in the world.

By the persuasion of the young woman, continued the Corporal, the cart with the wounded men set off without me : She had assured them I should expire immediately, if I was put into the cart. So, when I came to myself—I found myself, in a still, quiet cottage, with no one but the young woman, and the peasant and his wife. I was laid across the bed in the corner of the room, with my wounded leg upon a chair, and the young woman beside me, holding the corner of her handkerchief dipp'd in vinegar to my nose with one hand, and rubbing my temples with the other.

I took her at first to be the daughter of the peasant (for it was no inn)—so had offer'd her a little purse with eighteen florins, which my poor

brother Tom (here Trim wip'd his eyes) had sent me as a token by a recruit, just before he set out for Lisbon——

—I never told your honor that piteous story yet —here Trim wiped his eyes a third time.

The young woman call'd the old man and his wife into the room, to show them the money, in order to gain me credit for a bed, and what little necessaries I should want, till I should be in a condition to be got to the hospital—Come, then! said she, tying up the little purse—I'll be your banker—but, as that office alone will not keep me employ'd, I'll be your nurse too.

I thought by her manner of speaking this, as well as by her dress, which I then began to consider more attentively—that the young woman could not be the daughter of the peasant.

She was in black down to her toes, with her hair conceal'd under a cambrick border, laid close to her forehead: She was one of those kind of nuns, an' please your honor, of which, your honor knows, there are a good many in Flanders which they let go loose——By thy description, Trim, said my uncle Toby, I dare say she was a young Beguine, of which there are none to be found any where but in the Spanish Netherlands —except at Amsterdam;—they differ from nuns in this, that they can quit their cloister, if they choose to marry; they visit and take care of the sick, by profession——I had rather, for my own part, they did it out of good nature.

—She often told me, quoth Trim, she did it for the love of Christ—I did not like it.——I believe, Trim, we are both wrong, said my uncle

Toby——We'll ask Mr. Yorick about it to-night, at my brother Shandy's———so put me in mind, added my uncle Toby.

The young Beguine, continued the Corporal, had scarce given herself time to tell me, "she would be my nurse," when she hastily turned about to begin the office of one, and prepare something for me——and, in a short time——— though I thought it a long one—she came back with flannels, &c. &c. and having fomented my knee soundly for a couple of hours, &c. and made me a thin bason of gruel for my supper——she wish'd me rest, and promised to be with me early in the morning———She wish'd me, an' please your honor, what was not to be had. My fever ran very high that night——her figure made sad disturbance with me—I was every moment cutting the world in two—to give here half of it—and every moment was I crying, that I had nothing but a knapsack and eighteen florins to share with her——The whole night long was the fair Beguine, like an angel, close by my bed-side, holding back my curtain and offering me cordials, —and I was only awakened from my dream by her coming there at the hour promised, and giving them in reality. In truth she was scarce ever from me; and so accustomed was I to receive life from her hands, that my heart sickened, and I lost color when she left the room: And yet, continued the Corporal, (making one of the strangest reflections upon it in the world)——

—"It was not love"——for during the three weeks she was almost constantly with me, fomenting my knee with her hand, night and day ——I can honestly say, an' please your honor— that * * * * * * * * * * * * * * once.

That was very odd, Trim, quoth my uncle Toby—I think so too—said Mrs. Wadman.

It never did, said the Corporal.

## CHAP. XXI.

—BUT 'tis no marvel, continued the Corporal—seeing my uncle Toby musing upon it——for love, an' please your honor, is exactly like war, in this; That a soldier, though he has escaped three weeks complete o'Saturday night,—may nevertheless be shot thro' his heart on Sunday morning. It happened so here, an' please your honor; with this difference only—that it was on Sunday in the afternoon, when I fell in love all at once with a sisserara—it burst upon me, an' please your honor, like a bomb——scarce giving me time to say, "God bless me."

I thought, Trim, said my uncle Toby, a man never fell in love so very suddenly.

Yes, and please your honor, if he is in the way of it—replied Trim.

I prithee, quoth my uncle Toby, inform me how this matter happened.

—With all pleasure, said the Corporal making a bow.

## CHAP. XXII.

I HAD escaped, continued the Corporal, all that time from falling in love, and had gone on to

the end of the chapter, had it not been predestined otherwise—there is no resisting our fate.——

It was on a Sunday in the afternoon, as I told your honor.

The old man and his wife had walked out—

Every thing was still and hush as midnight about the house——

There was not so much as a duck or a duckling about the yard—

When the fair Beguine came in to see me.

My wound was then in a fair way of doing well—the inflammation had been gone off for some time, but it was succeeded with an itching both above and below my knee, so insufferable, that I had not shut my eyes the whole night for it.

Let me see it, said she, kneeling down upon the ground parallel to my knee, and laying her hand upon the part below it—it only wants rubbing a little, said the Beguine; so covering it with the bed clothes, she began with the fore-finger of her right hand to rub under my knee, guiding her fore-finger backwards and forwards by the edge of the flannel which kept on the dressing.

In five or six minutes, I felt slightly the end of her second finger, and presently it was laid flat with the other, and she continued rubbing in that way round and round for a good while; it then came into my head that I should fall in love—I blush'd when I saw how white a hand she had ——I shall never, an' please your honor, behold another hand so white whilst I live——

—Not in that place, said my uncle Toby——

Tho' it was the most serious despair in nature to the Corporal—he could not forbear smiling.

The young Beguine, continued the Corporal, perceiving it was of great service to me——from rubbing, for some time, with two fingers—proceeded to rub at length with three—till by little and little she brought down the fourth, and then rubb'd with her whole hand: I will never say another word, an' please your honor, upon hands again.....but it was softer than satin.....

—Prithee, Trim, commend it as much as thou wilt, said my uncle Toby; I shall hear thy story with more delight.....The Corporal thank'd his master most unfeignedly; but having nothing to say upon the Beguine's hand but the same over again—he proceeded to the effects of it.

The fair Beguine, said the Corporal, continued rubbing with her whole hand under my knee—till I fear'd her zeal would weary her—"I would do a thousand times more," said she, "for the love of Christ."—In saying which she pass'd her hand across the flannel, to the part above my knee, which I had equally complained of, and rubb'd it also.

I perceived then I was beginning to be in love.

As she continued rub-rub-rubbing.....I felt it spread from under her hand, an' please your honor, to every part of my frame.....

The more she rubb'd and the longer strokes she took.....the more the fire kindled in my veins .....till at length, by two or three strokes longer than the rest—my passion rose to the highest pitch—I seiz'd her hand.....

.....And then thou clapped'st it to thy lips, Trim, said my uncle Toby, and madest a speech.

Whether the Corporal's amour terminated precisely in the way my uncle Toby described it, is not material; it is enough that it contained in it the essence of all the love-romances which ever have been wrote since the beginning of the world,

## CHAP. XXIII.

AS soon as the Corporal had finished the story of his amour—or rather my uncle Toby for him—Mrs. Wadman silently sallied forth from her arbor, replaced the pin in her mob, pass'd the wicker-gate, and advanced slowly towards my uncle Toby's sentry-box: The disposition which Trim had made in my uncle Toby's mind, was too favorable a crisis to be let slip.....

.....The attack was determined upon: It was facilitated still more by my uncle Toby's having ordered the Corporal to wheel off the pioneer's shovel, the spade, the pickaxe, the piquets, and other military stores which lay scatter'd upon the ground where Dunkirk stood.....The Corporal had marched.....the field was clear.

Now consider, sir, what nonsense it is, either in fighting, or writing, or any thing else (whether in rhime to it, or not) which a man has occasion to do—to act by plan: For if ever PLAN, independent of all circumstances, deserved registering in letters of gold (I mean in the archives of Gotham)—it was certainly the PLAN of Mrs. Wadman's attack of my uncle Toby in his sentry-box, BY PLAN.—Now the plan hanging up in it at this juncture, being the plan of Dunkirk—and the tale of Dunkirk a tale of relaxation, it opposed every impression she could make: And, besides, could she have gone upon it—the manœuvre of fingers and hands in the attack of the sentry-box, was so outdone by that of the fair Beguine's in Trim's story.....That just then, that particular attack, however successful before.....became the most heartless attack that could be made.

O! let woman alone for this. Mrs. Wadman had scarce opened the wicker-gate, when her genius sported with the change of circumstances.

.....She formed a new attack in a moment.

## CHAP. XXIV.

.....I AM half distracted, captain Shandy, said Mrs. Wadman, holding up her cambric handkerchief to her left eye, as she approach'd the door of my uncle Toby's sentry-box .....a mote.....or sand.....or something—I know not what, has got into this eye of mine—do look into it—it is not in the white—

. . . . . .

In saying which, Mrs. Wadman edged herself close in beside my uncle Toby, and squeezing herself down upon the corner of his bench, she gave him an opportunity of doing it without rising up —Do look into it—said she.

Honest soul, thou did'st look into it with as much innocency of heart as ever child look'd into a raree-show box; and 'twere as much a sin to have hurt thee.

.....If a man will be peeping of his own accord into things, of that nature—I've nothing to say to it.

My uncle Toby never did: And I will answer for him, that he would have sat quietly upon a sopha from June to January, (which, you know, takes in both the hot and cold months) with an

eye as fine as the Thracian* Rhodope's beside him, without being able to tell, whether it was a black or a blue one.

The difficulty was to get my uncle Toby to look at one at all.

'Tis surmounted. And

I see him yonder with his pipe pendulous in his hand, and the ashes falling out of it—looking—and looking—then rubbing his eyes—and looking again, with twice the good nature that ever Galileo look'd for a spot in the sun.

In vain! for by all the powers which animate the organ—widow Wadman's left eye shines this moment as lucid as her right—there is neither mote, or sand, or dust, or chaff, or speck, or particle of opaque matter floating in it—there is nothing, my dear paternal uncle! but one lambent delicious fire, furtively shooting out from every part of it, in all directions, into thine.....

—If thou lookest, uncle Toby, in search of this mote one moment longer—thou art undone.

## CHAP. XXV.

AN eye is for all the world exactly like a cannon, in this respect, That it is not so much the eye or the cannon, in themselves; as it is the

* Rhodope Thracia tam inevitabili fascino instructa, tam exacte oculis intuens attraxit, ut si in illam quis incidisset, fieri non posset, quin caperetur——I know not who.

carriage of the eye—and the carriage of the cannon, by which both one and the other are enabled to do so much execution. I don't think the comparison a bad one: However, as 'tis made and placed at the head of the chapter, as much for use as ornament, all I desire in return, is, that whenever I speak of Mrs. Wadman's eyes (except once in the next period) that you keep it in your fancy.

I protest, madam, said my uncle Toby, I can see nothing whatever in your eye.

It is not in the white, said Mrs. Wadman—my uncle Toby look'd with might and main into the pupil.

Now, of all the eyes which ever were created—from your own, madam, up to those of Venus herself, which certainly were as venereal a pair of eyes as ever stood in a head—there never was an eye of them all so fitted to rob my uncle Toby of his repose, as the very eye at which he was looking—it was not, madam, a rolling eye—a romping or a wanton one—nor was it an eye sparkling—petulant or imperious—of high claims and terrifying exactions, which would have curdled at once that milk of human nature, of which my uncle Toby was made up—but 'twas an eye full of gentle salutations—and soft responses—speaking—not like the trumpet stop of some ill made organ, in which many an eye I talk to holds coarse converse—but whispering soft—like the last low accents of an expiring saint—"How can you live comfortless, "captain Shandy, and alone, without a bosom to "lean your head on—or trust your cares to!"

It was an eye.....

But I shall be in love with it myself, if I say another word about it.

—It did my uncle Toby's business.

## CHAP. XXVI.

THERE is nothing shows the characters of my father and my uncle Toby in a more entertaining light, than their different manner of deportment under the same accident—for I call not love a misfortune, from a persuasion, that a man's heart is ever the better for it—Great God! what must my uncle Toby's have been, when 'twas all benignity without it.

My father, as appears from many of his papers, was very subject to this passion before he married—but from a little subacid kind of drollish impatience in his nature, whenever it befel him, he would never submit to it like a christian, but would pish, and huff, and bounce, and kick, and play the devil, and write the bitterest philippics against the eye that ever man wrote.—There is one verse upon some body's eye or other, that for two or three nights together, had put him by his rest; which, in his first transport of resentment against it, he begins thus:

"A Devil 'tis—and mischief such doth work
As never yet did Pagan, Jew, or Turk."*

In short, during the whole paroxysm, my father was all abuse and foul language, approaching rather towards malediction—only he did not do it with as much method as Ernulphus—he was too impetuous; nor with Ernulphus's policy—for tho' my father with the most intolerant spirit, would curse both this and that, and every thing under

* This will be printed with my father's life of Socrates, &c. &c.

heaven, which was either aiding or abetting to his love.....yet never concluded his chapter of curses upon it, without cursing himself in at the bargain, as one of the most egregious fools and coxcombs, he would say, that ever was let loose in the world.

My uncle Toby, on the contrary, took it like a lamb—sat still and let the poison work in his veins without resistance;—in the sharpest exacerbations of his wound (like that on his groin) never dropt one fretful or discontented word;—he blamed neither heaven nor earth—or thought or spoke an injurious thing of any body, or any part of it; he sat solitary and pensive with his pipe—looking at his lame leg—then whiffing out a sentimental heigh-ho! which, mixing with the smoke, incommoded no one mortal.

He took it like a lamb,—I say.

In truth he had mis-took it at first; for having taken a ride with my father, that very morning, to save if possible a beautiful wood which the dean and chapter were hewing down to give to the poor*, which said wood being in full view of my uncle Toby's house, and of singular service to him in his description of the battle of Wynnendale—by trotting on too hastily to save it—upon an uneasy saddle—worse horse, &c. &c.—it had so happened, that the serious part of the blood had got betwixt the two skins, in the nethermost part of my uncle Toby—the first shootings of which (as my uncle Toby had no experience of love) he had taken for a part of the passion—till the blister breaking in the one case—and the

* Mr. Shandy muſt mean the poor in ſpirit; inaſmuch as *they* divided the money amongſt themſelves.

other remaining—my uncle Toby was presently convinced, that his wound was not a skin-deep wound—but that it had gone to his heart.

## CHAP. XXVII.

THE world is ashamed of being virtuous—— My uncle Toby knew little of the world; and therefore when he felt he was in love with the widow Wadman, he had no conception that the thing was any more to be made a mystery of, than if Mrs. Wadman had given him a cut with a gapp'd knife across his finger: Had it been otherwise—yet, as he ever look'd upon Trim as an humble friend, and saw fresh reasons, every day of his life, to treat him as such——it would have made no variation in the manner in which he informed him of the affair.

"I am in love, Corporal!" quoth my uncle Toby.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

IN love! said the Corporal—your honor was very well the day before yesterday, when I was telling your honor the story of the king of Bohemia——Bohemia! said my uncle Toby ——musing a long time——What became of that story, Trim?

—We lost it, an' please your honor, somehow betwixt us——but your honor was as free from love then as I am—'Twas just whilst thou

went'st off with the wheel-barrow—with Mrs. Wadman, quoth my uncle Toby——She has left a ball here—added my uncle Toby——pointing to his breast——

—She can no more, an' please your honor stand a siege, than she can fly—cried the Corporal—

—But as we are neighbors, Trim,—the best way I think is to let her know it civilly first—— quoth my uncle Toby.

Now if I might presume, said the Corporal, to differ from your honor——

—Why else do I talk to thee, Trim? said my uncle Toby, mildly——

—Then I would begin, an' please your honor, with making a good thundering attack upon her, in return—and telling her civilly afterwards —for if she knows any thing of your honors's being in love before-hand—L—d help her!—she knows no more at present of it, Trim, said my uncle Toby—than the child unborn—

Precious souls!——

Mrs. Wadman had told it with all its circumstances to Mrs Bridget twenty-fours hours before, and was at that very moment sitting in council with her, touching some slight misgivings with regard to the issue of the affair, which the devil, who never lies dead in a ditch, had put into her head—before he would allow half time to get quietly through her Te Deum——

I am terribly afraid, said widow Wadman, in case I should marry him, Bridget—that the poor captain will not enjoy his health, with the monstrous wound upon his groin.

It may not, madam, be so very large, replied Bridget, as you think—and I believe besides, added she—that 'tis dried up—

I could like to know—merely for his sake, said Mrs. Wadman—

—We'll know the long and the broad of it, in ten days—answered Mrs. Bridget; for whilst the captain is paying his addresses to you—I'm confident Mr. Trim will be for making love to me—and I'll let him as much as he will—added Bridget—to get it all out of him——

The measures were taken at once—and my uncle Toby and the Corporal went on with theirs.

Now, quoth the Corporal, setting his left hand a-kimbo, and giving such a flourish with his right, as just promised success—and no more—if your honor will give me leave to lay down the plan of this attack——

—Thou wilt please me by it, Trim, said my uncle Toby, exceedingly—and as I foresee thou must act in it as my aid-de-camp, here's a crown, Corporal, to begin with, to steep thy commission.—Then an' please your honor, said the Corporal, (making a bow first for his commission)—we will begin with getting your honor's laced clothes out of the great campaign trunk, to be well air'd, and have the blue and gold taken up at the sleeve—and I'll put your white ramaillie-wig fresh into pipes—and send for a taylor to have your honor's thin scarlet breeches turn'd——

—I had better take the red plush ones, quoth my uncle Toby.—They will be too clumsy—— said the Corporal.

## CHAP. XXIX.

—THOU wilt get a brush and a little chalk to my sword.—'Twill be only in your honor's way, replied Trim.

## CHAP. XXX.

—BUT your honor's two razors shall be new set—and I will get my Montero cap furbish'd up, and put on poor lieutenant Le Fevre's regimental coat, which your honor gave me to wear for his sake—and as soon as your honor is clean shaved—and has got your clean shirt on, with your blue and gold, or your fine scarlet—— sometimes one, and sometimes t'other—and every thing is ready for the attack—we'll march up boldly, as if 'twas to the face of a bastion; and whilst your honor engages Mrs. Wadman in the parlor, to the right—I'll attack Mrs. Bridget in the kitchen, to the left; and having seized that pass, I'll answer for it, said the Corporal, snapping his fingers over his head, that the day is your own.

I wish I may but manage it right, said my uncle Toby——but I declare, Corporal, I had rather march up to the very edge of a trench——

——A woman is quite a different thing—— said the Corporal.

——I suppose so, quoth my uncle Toby.

## CHAP. XXXI.

IF any thing in the world, which my father said, could have provoked my uncle Toby, during the time he was in love, it was the perverse use my father was always making of an expression of Hilarion the hermit; who, in speaking of his abstinence, his watchings, flagellations, and other instrumental parts of his religion——would say——tho' with more facetiousness than became an hermit——"That they were the means he used to make his ass (meaning his body) leave of kicking."

It pleased my father well; it was not only a laconic way of expressing—but of libelling, at the same time, the desires and appetites of the lower part of us; so that for many years of my father's life, 'twas his constant mode of expression—he never used the word passions once——but ass always instead of them—so that he might be said truly, to have been upon the bones, or the back of his own ass, or else of some other man's, during all that time.

I must here observe to you, the difference betwixt
my father's ass
and my hobby-horse——in order to keep characters as separate as may be in our fancies as we go along.

For my hobby-horse, if you recollect a little, is no way a vicious beast; he has scarce one hair or lineament of the ass about him——'tis the sporting little filly-folly which carries you out for the present hour——a maggot, a butterfly, a picture,

a fiddlestick——an uncle Toby's siege——or any thing, which a man makes a shift to get astride on, to canter it away from the cares and solicitudes of life—'Tis as useful a beast as is in the whole creation—nor do I really see how the world could do without it,

—But, for my father's ass—oh! mount him—mount him—mount him—(that's three times, is it not?)—mount him not:—'tis a beast concupiscent—and foul befal the man, who does not hinder him from kicking.

## CHAP. XXXII.

WELL! dear brother Toby, said my father, upon his first seeing him after he fell in love—and how goes it with your ass?——

Now, my uncle Toby, thinking more of the part where he had had the blister, than of Hilarion's metaphor——and our preconceptions having (you know) as great a power over the sounds of words as the shapes of things, he had imagined, that my father, who was not very ceremonious in his choice of words, had inquired after the part by its proper name; so, notwithstanding my mother, doctor Slop, and Mr. Yorick, were sitting in the parlor, he thought it rather civil to conform to the term my father had made use of, than not. When a man is hemm'd in by two indecorums, and must commit one of 'em——I always observe let him choose which he will, the world will blame him——so I should not be astonished if it blames my uncle Toby.

—My a—e, quoth my uncle Toby, is much better—brother Shandy.—My father had formed

great expectations from his ass in this onset; and would have brought him on again; but doctor Slop setting up an intemperate laugh—and my mother crying out, L— bless us!——it drove my father's ass off the field—and the laugh then becoming general—there was no bringing him back to the charge, for some time——

And so the discourse went on without him.

Every body, said my mother, says you are in love, brother Toby—and we hope it is true.——

I am as much in love, sister, I believe, replied my uncle Toby, as any man usually is—Humph! said my father——And when did you know it? quoth my mother———

When the blister broke, replied my uncle Toby.

My uncle Toby's reply put my father into good temper—so he charged o'foot.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

AS the ancients agree, brother Toby, said my father, that there are two different and distinct kinds of love, according to the different parts which are affected by it—the brain or liver—I think, when a man is in love, it behoves him a little to consider which of the two he is fallen into.

What signifies it, brother Shandy, replied my uncle Toby, which of the two it is, provided it will but make a man marry, and love his wife, and get a few children?

—A few children! cried my father, rising out of his chair, and looking full in my mother's face, as he forced his way betwixt her's and doctor

Slop's——a few children! cried my father, repeating my uncle Toby's words as he walk'd to and fro———

—Not, my dear brother Toby, cried my father, recovering himself all at once, and coming close up to the back of my uncle Toby's chair—not that I should be sorry hadst thou a score—on the contrary, I should rejoice—and be as kind, Toby, to every one of them as a father——

My uncle Toby stole his hand unperceived behind his chair, to give my father's a squeeze—

—Nay, moreover, continued he, keeping hold of my uncle Toby's hand—so much dost thou possess, my dear Toby, of the milk of human nature, and so little of its asperities...'tis piteous the world is not peopled by creatures which resemble thee; and was I an Asiatic monarch, added my father, heating himself with his new project....I would oblige thee, provided it would not impair thy strength....or dry up thy radical moisture too fast ....or weaken thy memory or fancy, brother Toby, which these gymnics, inordinately taken, are apt to do....else, dear Toby, I would procure thee the most beautiful women in my empire, and I would oblige thee, nolens, volens, to beget for me one subject every month.———

As my father pronounced the last word of the sentence....my mother took a pinch of snuff.

Now, I would not, quoth my uncle Toby, get a child, nolens, volens, that is, whether I would or no, to please the greatest prince upon earth.

....And 'twould be cruel in me, brother Toby, to compel thee, said my father——but 'tis a case put, to show thee, that it is not thy begetting a child....in case thou should'st be able.....but the system of love and marriage thou goest upon, *which* I would set thee right in.———

There is, at least, said Yorick, a great deal of reason and plain sense in Captain Shandy's opinion of love; and 'tis amongst the ill-spent hours of my life, which I have to answer for, that I have read so many flourishing poets and rhetoricians in my time, from whom I never could extract so much——

I wish, Yorick, said my father, you had read Plato; for there you would have learnt, that there are two LOVES——I know there were two RELIGIONS, replied Yorick, amongst the ancients...one for the vulgar, and another for the learned; but I think ONE LOVE might have served both of them very well——

It could not, replied my father——and for the same reasons; for, of these Loves, according to Ficinus's comment upon Velasius, the one is rational——

——The other is natural——

the first ancient....without mother.....where Venus had nothing to do: The second, begotten of Jupiter and Dione.——

.....Pray, brother, quoth my uncle Toby, what has a man who believes in God to do with this? My father could not stop to answer, for fear of breaking the thread of his discourse.

This latter, continued he, partakes wholly of the nature of Venus.

The first which is the golden chain let down from heaven, excites to love heroic, which comprehends in it, and excites to the desire of philosophy and truth——the second excites to desire, simply.——

....I think the procreation of children as beneficial to the world, said Yorick, as the finding out the longitude——

will I answer for it, that this self-same tune will not be played this twelvemonth.

We have taken our measures badly, quoth my uncle Toby, looking up interrogatively in Trim's face.

I would lay my Montero cap, said Trim—— Now, Trim's Montero cap, as I once told you, was his constant wager; and having furbish'd it up that very night, in order to go upon the attack....it made the odds look more considerable....I would lay, an' please your honor, my Montero cap to a shilling——was it proper, continued Trim, (making a bow) to offer a wager before your honors.....

There is nothing improper in it, said my father ...'tis a mode of expression; for in saying thou would'st lay thy Montero cap to a shilling.....all thou meanest is this....that thou believest.....

——Now, what do'st thou believe?

That widow Wadman, an' please your worship, cannot hold it out ten days——

And whence, cried Slop, jeeringly, hast thou all this knowledge of woman, friend?

By falling in love with a popish clergywoman, said Trim.

'Twas a Beguine, said my uncle Toby.

Doctor Slop was in too much wrath, to listen to the distinction; and my father taking that very crisis to fall in helter-skelter upon the whole order of Nuns and Beguines, a set of silly, fusty baggages——Slop could not stand it——and my uncle Toby having some measures to take about his breeches....and Yorick about his fourth general division....in order for their several attacks next day.....the company broke up: And my father being left alone, and having half an hour

upon his hands betwixt that and bed-time; he called for pen, ink and paper, and wrote my uncle Toby the following letter of instructions:

My dear brother Toby,

WHAT I am going to say to thee, is upon the nature of women, and of love-making to them: And perhaps it is as well for thee—— tho' not so well for me—that thou hast occasion for a letter of instructions upon that head, and that I am able to write it to thee.

Had it been the good pleasure of him who disposes of our lots—and thou no sufferer by the knowledge, I had been well content that thou should'st have dip'd the pen this moment into the ink, instead of myself: But that not being the case—Mrs. Shandy being now close beside me, preparing for bed—I have thrown together, without order, and just as they have came into my mind, such hints and documents as I deem may be of use to thee: Intending in this to give thee a token of my love; not doubting, my dear Toby, of the manner in which it will be accepted.——

In the first place, with regard to all which concerns religion in the affair—though I perceive, from a glow in my cheek, that I blush as I begin to speak to thee upon the subject, as well knowing, notwithstanding thy unaffected secrecy, how few of its offices thou neglectest—yet I would remind thee of one (during the continuance of thy courtship) in a particular manner, which I would not have omitted; and that is, never to go forth upon the enterprize, whether it be in the morning or the afternoon, without first recommending thyself to the protection of Almighty God, that *he may defend thee from the evil one.*

Shave the whole top of thy crown clean, once at least, every four or five days, but oftener, if convenient; lest, in taking off thy wig before her, thro' absence of mind, she should be able to discover how much has been cut away by Time ——how much by Trim.

—'Twere better to keep ideas of baldness out of her fancy.

Always carry it in thy mind, and act upon it, as a sure maxim, Toby——

"That women are timid:" And 'tis well they are—else there would be no dealing with them.

Let not thy breeches be too tight, or hang too loose about thy thighs, like the trunk-hose of our ancestors.

—A just medium prevents all conclusions.

Whatever thou hast to say, be it more or less, forget not to utter it in a low soft tone of voice.... Silence, and whatever approaches it, weaves dreams of midnight secrecy into the brain: For this cause, if thou canst help it, never throw down the tongs and poker.

Avoid all kinds of pleasantry and facetiousness in thy discourse with her, and do whatever lies in thy power, at the same time, to keep from her all books and writings which tend thereto: There are some devotional tracts, which if thou canst entice her to read over—it will be well: But suffer her not to look into Rabelais, or Scarron, or Don Quixote——

....They are all books which excite laughter: And thou knowest, dear Toby, that there is no passion so serious as lust.

Stick a pin in the bosom of thy shirt, before thou enterest her parlor.

And if thou art permitted to sit upon the same sopha with her, and she gives thee occasion to lay thy hand upon hers,...beware of taking it....thou canst not lay thy hand on hers, but she will feel the temper of thine. Leave that, and as many other things as thou can'st, quite undetermined; by so doing, thou wilt have her curiosity on thy side; and, if she is not conquer'd by that, and thy Ass continues still kicking, which there is great reason to suppose....thou must begin with first losing a few ounces of blood below the ears, according to the practice of the ancient Scythians, who cured the most intemperate fits of the appetite by that means.

Avicenna, after this, is for having the part anointed with the sirup of hellebore, using proper evacuations and purges....and, I believe rightly. But thou must eat little or no goat's flesh, nor red deer....nor even foal's flesh, by any means; and carefully abstain,...that is, as much as thou canst, from peacocks, cranes, coots, didappers, and water-hens.——

As for thy drink....I need not tell thee, it must be the infusion of VERVAIN, and the herb HANEA, of which Ælian relates such effects...but if thy stomach palls with it...,discontinue it from time to time, taking cucumbers, melons, purslane, water-lilies, woodbine, and lettuce, in the stead of them.

There is nothing farther for thee, which occurs to me at present——

——Unless the breaking out of a fresh war...,So wishing every thing dear Toby, for the best,——

I rest thy affectionate brother,

WALTER SHANDY.

## CHAP. XXXV.

WHILST my father was writing his letter of instructions, my uncle Toby and the Corporal were busy in preparing every thing for the attack. As the turning of the thin scarlet breeches was laid aside (at least for the present) there was nothing which should put it off beyond the next morning; so accordingly it was resolved upon, for eleven o'clock.

Come, my dear, said my father to my mother ....'twill be but like a brother and sister, if you and I take a walk down to my brother Toby's,.... to countenance him in this attack of his.

My uncle Toby and the Corporal had been accoutred both some time, when my father and mother entered, and the clock striking eleven, were that moment in motion to sally forth....But the account of this is worth more than to be wove into the fag-end of the eight volume of such a work as this.....My father had no time but to put the letter of instructions into my uncle Toby's coat-pocket.....and join with my mother in wishing his attack prosperous.

I could like, said my mother, to look through the key-hole, out of curiosity——

Call it by its right name, my dear, quoth my father——

And look through the key-hole as long as you will.

END OF THE EIGHTH BOOK.

# A

# *DEDICATION*

## TO A

## GREAT MAN.

HAVING *a priori*, intended to dedicate *The Amours of my uncle Toby* to Mr. ***—I see more reasons, *a posteriori*, for doing it to Lord ******.

I should lament from my soul, if this exposed me to the jealousy of their Reverences, because, *a posteriori*, in court-latin, signifies the kissing hands for preferment—or any thing elſe—in order to get it.

My opinion of Lord ****** is neither better nor worse, than it was of Mr. ***. Honors, like impressions upon coin, may give an ideal and local value to a bit of base metal; but gold and silver will pass, all the world over, without any other recommendation than their own weight.

The same good-will that made me think of offering up half an hours amusement to

Mr. *** when out of place—operates more forcibly at present, as half an hour's amusement will be more serviceable and refreshing, after labor and sorrow, than after a philosophical repast,

Nothing is so perfectly *amusement* as a total change of ideas; no ideas are so totally different as those of ministers, and innocent lovers; for which reason, when I come to talk of statesmen and patriots, and set such marks upon them as will prevent confusion and mistakes concerning them for the future—I propose to dedicate that volume to some gentle shepherd,

> Whose thoughts proud science never taught to stray
> Far as the statesman's walk, or patriot-way;
> Yet simple nature to his hopes had given
> Out of a cloud-capt hill an humbler heaven;
> Some untam'd world in depth of woods embrac'd—
> Some happier island in the wat'ry waste—
> And where, admitted to that equal sky,
> His faithful dog should bear him company.

In a word, by thus introducing an entire new set of objects to his imagination, I shall unavoidably give a *diversion* to his passionate and love-sick contemplations. In the mean time,

I am,

THE AUTHOR.

THE

# LIFE AND OPINIONS

OF

# TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENT.

## CHAP. I.

I CALL all the powers of time and chance, which severally check us in our careers, in this world, to bear me witness, that I could never yet get fairly to my uncle Toby's amours, till this very moment, that my mother's curiosity, as she stated the affair,—or a different impulse in her, as my father would have it—wished her to take a peep at them thro' the key-hole.

"Call it, my dear, by its right name, quoth my father, and look thro' the key-hole as long as you will."

Nothing but the fermentation of that little sub-acid humor, which I have often spoken of, in my

father's habit, could have vented such an insinuation—he was, however, frank and generous in his nature, and at all times open to conviction; so that he had scarce got to the last word of this ungracious retort, when his conscience smote him.

My mother was then conjugally swinging with her left arm twisted under his right, in such wise, that the inside of her hand rested upon the back of his—she raised her fingers and let them fall: It could scarce be called a tap; or, if it was a tap —'twould have puzzled a casuist to say, whether 'twas a tap of remonstrance, or a tap of confession: My father, who was all sensibilities from head to foot, class'd it right—Conscience redoubled her blow—he turn'd his face suddenly the other way, and my mother supposing his body was about to turn with it, in order to move homewards by a cross movement of her right leg, keeping her left as its centre, brought herself so far in front, that, as he turned his head, he met her eye—Confusion again! he saw a thousand reasons to wipe out the reproach, and as many to reproach himself——A thin, blue, chill, pellucid crystal, with all its humors so at rest, the least mote or speck of desire might have been seen at the bottom of it, had it existed:—It did not—and how I happen to be so lewd myself, particularly a little before the vernal and autumnal equinoxes—Heaven above knows. —My mother—madam—was so at no time, either by nature, by institution, or example.

A temperate current of blood ran orderly thro' her veins in all months of the year, and in all critical movements, both of the day and night alike; nor did she superinduce the least heat into her humors, from the manual effervescencies of devotional tracts which, having little or no meaning in them, nature is oft-times obliged to find

one ;——and as for my father's example! 'twas so far from being either aiding or abetting thereunto, that 'twas the whole business of his life to keep all fancies of that kind out of her head.—— Nature had done her part, to have spared him this trouble ; and, what was not a little inconsistent, my father knew it—and here am I sitting this twelfth day of August, 1766, in a purple jerkin and yellow pair of slippers, without either wig or cap on, a most tragi-comical completion of his prediction, "That I should neither think nor "act like any other man's child, upon that very "account."

The mistake of my father was, in attacking my mother's motive, instead of the act itself: For certainly, key-holes were made for other purposes ; and, considering the act as an act which interfered with a true proposition, and denied a key-hole to be what it was—it became a violation of nature, and was so far, you see, criminal.

It is for this reason, an' please your reverences, that key-holes are the occasions of more sin and wickedness, than all other holes in this world put together.

—Which leads me to my uncle Toby's amours.

## CHAP. II.

THO' the Corporal had been as good as his word, in putting my uncle Toby's great ramillie-wig into pipes, yet the time was too short to produce any great effects from it : It had lain many years squeezed up in the corner of his old campaign trunk ; and as bad forms are not so easy

to be got the better of, and the use of candle-ends not so well understood, it was not so pliable a business as one would have wished. The Corporal, with cheery eye, and both arms extended, had fallen back perpendicular from it a score times, to inspire, if possible, with a better air——Had SPLEEN given a look at it, 'twould have cost her ladyship a smile—It curled every where but where the Corporal would have it; and where a buckle or two, in his opinion, would have done it honor, he could as soon have raised the dead.

Such it was——or rather such it would have seem'd upon any other brow; but the sweet look of goodness which sat upon my uncle Toby's, assimilated every thing around it so sovereignly to itself, and nature had, moreover, wrote GENTLEMAN, with so fair a hand in every line of his countenance, that even his tarnish'd gold-laced hat, and huge cockade of flimsy taffeta, became him; and tho' not worth a button in themselves, yet the moment my uncle Toby put them on, they became serious objects, and altogether seem'd to have been picked up by the hand of science to set him off to advantage.

Nothing in this world could have co-operated more powerfully towards this, than my uncle Toby's blue and gold——had not Quantity, in some measure, been necessary to Grace: In a period of fifteen or sixteen years since they had been made, by a total inactivity in my uncle Toby's life, for he seldom went farther than the bowling-green—his blue and gold had become so miserably too strait for him, that it was with the utmost difficulty the Corporal was able to get him into them: The taking them up at the sleeves, was of [illegible]o advantage—They were laced however down the [illegible]ck, and at the seams of the sides, &c. in the

mode of King William's reign; and, to shorten all description, they shone so bright against the sun that morning, and had so metallic and doughty an air with them, that had my uncle Toby thought of attacking in armor, nothing could have so well imposed upon his imagination.

As for the thin scarlet breeches, they had been unripp'd by the taylor between the legs, and left at sixes and sevens——

Yes, madam—but let us govern our fancies. It is enough they were held impracticable the night before; and, as there was no alternative in my uncle Toby's wardrobe, he sallied forth in the red plush.

The Corporal had array'd himself in poor Le Fevre's regimental coat; and, with his hair tuck'd up under his Montero cap, which he had furbished up for the occasion, march'd three paces distant from his master; a whiff of military pride had puffed out his shirt at the wrist; and upon that, in a black leather thong clipp'd into a tassel beyond the knot, hung the Corporal's stick—My uncle Toby carried his cane like a pike——

—It looks well at least,—quoth my father to himself.

## CHAP. III.

MY uncle Toby turned his head more than once behind him, to see how he was supported by the Corporal; and the Corporal, as oft as he did it, gave a slight flourish with his stick—but not vaporingly; and, with the sweetest as-

cent of most respectful encouragement, bid his honor "never fear."

Now, my uncle Toby did fear; and grievously too; he knew not (as my father had reproach'd him) so much as the right end of a woman from the wrong, and therefore was never altogether at his ease near any one of them—unless in sorrow or distress: Then, infinite was his pity: Nor would the most courteous night of romance have gone farther, at least upon one leg, to have wiped away a tear from a woman's eye; and yet, excepting once that he was beguiled into it by Mrs. Wadman, he had never looked stedfastly into one; and would often tell my father, in the simplicity of his heart, that it was almost (if not about) as bad as talking bawdy——

—And suppose it is? my father would say.

## CHAP. IV.

SHE cannot, quoth my uncle Toby, halting, when they had marched up to within twenty paces of Mrs. Wadman's door—she cannot, Corporal, take it amiss——

—She will take it, an' please your honor, said the Corporal, just as the Jew's widow at Lisbon took it of my brother Tom——

—And how was that? quoth my uncle Toby, facing quite about to the Corporal.

Your honor, replied the Corporal, knows of Tom's misfortunes; but this affair has nothing to do with them any farther than this, That if Tom

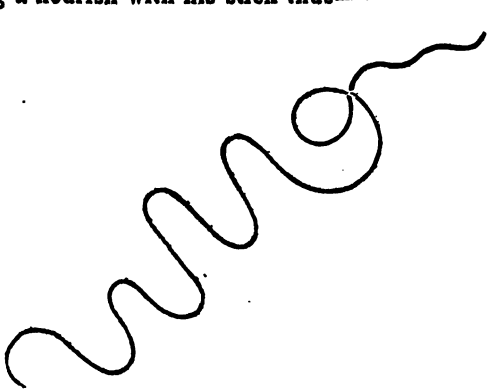
had not married the widow—or had it pleased God, after their marriage, that they had but put pork into their sausages, the honest soul had never been taken out of his warm bed, and dragg'd to the inquisition—'Tis a cursed place—added the Corporal, shaking his head—when once a poor creature is in, he is in, an' please your honor, for ever.

'Tis very true, said my uncle Toby, looking gravely at Mrs. Wadman's house, as he spoke.

Nothing, continued the Corporal, can be so sad as confinement for life—or so sweet, an' please your honor, as liberty.

Nothing, Trim—said my uncle Toby, musing—

Whilst a man is free—cried the Corporal, giving a flourish with his stick thus——



A thousand of my father's most subtle syllogisms could not have said more for celibacy.

My uncle Toby looked earnestly towards his cottage and his bowling-green.

The Corporal had unwarily conjured up the spirit of calculation with his wand; and he had nothing to do, but to conjure him down again with his story: And, in this form of exorcism, most unecclesiastically did the Corporal do it.

## CHAP. V.

AS Tom's place, an' please your honor, was easy—and the weather warm—it put him upon thinking seriously of settling himself in the world; and as it fell out about that time, that a Jew, who kept a sausage shop in the same street, had the ill luck to die of a strangury, and leave his widow in possession of a rousing trade—Tom thought (as every body at Lisbon was doing the best he could devise for himself) there could be no harm in offering her his service to carry it on: So without any introduction to the widow, except that of buying a pound of sausages at her shop—Tom set out—counting the matter thus within himself, as he walked along; that, let the worst come of it that could, he should at least get a pound of sausages for their worth—but, if things went well, he should be set up; inasmuch as he should get not only a pound of sausages—but a wife—and a sausage shop, an' please your honor, into the bargain.

Every servant in the family, from high to low, wished Tom success; and I can fancy, an' please your honor, I see him this moment with his white dimity waistcoat and breeches, and hat a little o' one side, passing jollily along the street, swinging his stick, with a smile and a cheerful word for every body he met:—But, alas! Tom! thou smilest no more, cried the Corporal, looking on

one side of him upon the ground, as if he apostrophized him in his dungeon.

Poor fellow! said my uncle Toby feelingly.

He was an honest, light-hearted lad, an' please your honor, as ever blood warm'd——

—Then he resembled thee, Trim, said my uncle Toby rapidly.

The Corporal blushed down to his fingers ends—a tear of sentimental bashfulness—another of gratitude to my uncle Toby—and a tear of sorrow for his brother's misfortunes, started into his eye, and ran sweetly down his cheek together; my uncle Toby's kindled, as one lamp does at another; and taking hold of the breast of Trim's coat (which had been that of Le Fevre's) as if to ease his lame leg, but in reality to gratify a finer feeling—he stood silent for a minute and a half; at the end of which he took his hand away and the Corporal making a bow, went on with his story of his brother and the Jew's widow.

## CHAP. VI.

WHEN Tom, an' please your honor, got to the shop, there was nobody in it, but a poor negro girl, with a bunch of white feathers slightly tied to the end of a long cane, flapping away flies——not killing them:——'Tis a pretty picture! said my uncle Toby——she had suffered prersecution, Trim, and had learned mercy——

—She was good, an' please your honor, from nature, as well as from hardships; and there are circumstances in the story of that poor friendless slut, that would melt a heart of stone, said Trim; and some dismal winter's evening, when your honor is in the humor, they shall be told you with the rest of Tom's story, for it makes a part of it——

Then do not forget, Trim, said my uncle Toby.

A negro has a soul, an' please your honor? said the Corporal (doubtingly.)

I am not much versed, Corporal, quoth my uncle Toby, in things of that kind; but I suppose, God would not leave him without one, any more than thee or me——

It would be putting one sadly over the head of another, quoth the Corporal.

It would so, said my uncle Toby. Why then, an' please your honor, is a black wench to be used worse than a white one?

I can give no reason, said my uncle Toby——

——Only, cried the Corporal, shaking his head, because she has no one to stand up for her——

—'Tis that very thing, Trim, quoth my uncle Toby, which recommends her to protection—and her brethren with her; 'tis the fortune of war which has put the whip into our hands now—where it may be hereafter, Heaven knows!—but be it where it will, the brave, Trim, will not use it unkindly.

God forbid, said the Corporal.

Amen, responded my uncle Toby, laying his hand upon his heart.

The Corporal returned to his story, and went on—but with an embarrassment in doing it, which here and there a reader, in this world, will not be able to comprehend; for, by the many sudden transitions all along, from one kind and cordial passion to another, in getting thus far on his way, he had lost the sportable key of his voice which gave sense and spirit to his tale; he attempted twice to resume it, but could not please himself; so giving a stout hem! to rally back the retreating spirits, and aiding Nature at the same time, with his left arm a kimbo on one side, and with his right a little extended, supporting her on the other—the Corporal got as near the note as he could; and in that attitude, continued his story.

## CHAP. VII.

AS Tom, an' please your honor, had no business at that time with the Moorish girl, he passed on into the room beyond, to talk to the Jew's widow about love—and his pound of sausages; and being, as I had told your honor, an open, cheery-hearted lad, with his character wrote in looks and carriage, he took a chair, and, without much apology, but with great civility at the same time, placed it close to her at the table, and sat down.

There is nothing so awkward, as courting a woman, an' please your honor, whilst she is making sausages—So Tom began a discourse upon them; first gravely—as, "How they were made—

"with what meats, herbs, and spices"—Then a little gaily—as, "With what skins—and if they "never burst—Whether the largest were not the best"—and so on—taking care only, as he went along, to season what he had to say upon sausages, rather under than over—that he might have room to act in.——

It was owing to the neglect of that very precaution, said my uncle Toby, laying his hand upon Trim's shoulder, that Count de la Motte lost the battle of Wynendale: He pressed too speedily into the wood; which, if he had not done, Lisle had not fallen into our hands, nor Ghent and Bruges, which both followed her example; it was too late in the year, continued my uncle Toby, and so terrible a season came on, that if things had not fallen out as they did, our troops must have perished in the open field.——

—Why therefore may not battles, an' please your honor, as well as marriages, be made in heaven?—My uncle Toby mused——

Religion inclined him to say one thing, and his high idea of military skill tempted him to say another; so not being able to frame a reply exactly to his mind—my uncle Toby said nothing at all, and the Corporal finished his story.

As Tom perceived, an' please your honor, that he gained ground, and that all he had said upon the subject of sausages was kindly taken, he went on to help her a little in making them.——First, by taking hold of the ring of the sausage, whilst she stroaked the forced meat down with her hand—then by cutting the strings into proper lengths, and holding them in his hand, whilst she took them out, one by one—then, by putting them

across her mouth, that she might take them out as she wanted them—and so on from little to more, till at last he adventured to tie the sausage himself, while she held the snout.

—Now, a widow, an' please your honor, always chooses a second husband as unlike the first as she can: So the affair was more than half settled in her mind before Tom mentioned it.

She made a feint, however, of defending herself, by snatching up a sausage:—Tom instantly laid hold of another——

But seeing Tom's had more gristle in it——

She signed the capitulation—and Tom sealed it; and there was an end of the matter.

## CHAP. VIII.

ALL womankind, continued Trim, (commenting upon his story) from the highest to the lowest, an' please your honor, love jokes; the difficulty is to know how they choose to have them cut; and there is no knowing that, but by trying, as we do our artillery in the field, by raising or letting down their breeches, till we hit the mark.

—I like the comparison, said my uncle Toby, better than the thing itself——

—Because your honor, quoth the Corporal, loves glory more than pleasure.

—I hope, Trim, answered my uncle Toby, I love mankind more than either; and as the know-

ledge of arms tends so apparently to the good and quiet of the world—and particularly that branch of it which we have practised together in our bowling-green—has no object but to shorten the strides of AMBITION, and intrench the lives and fortunes of the FEW, from the plunderings of the MANY—whenever that drum beats in our ears, I trust, Corporal, we shall neither of us want so much humanity and fellow-feeling, as to face about and march.

In pronouncing this, my uncle Toby faced about, and marched firmly, as at the head of his company—and the faithful Corporal, shouldering his stick, and striking his hand upon his coat-skirt as he took his first step—marched close behind him down the avenue.

—Now, what can their two noddles be about? cried my father to my mother—by all that's strange, they are besieging Mrs. Wadman in form, and are marching round her house to mark out the lines of circumvallation.

I dare say, quoth my mother.—But stop, dear sir;—for what my mother dared to say upon the occasion—and what my father did say upon it—with her replies, and his rejoinders, shall be read, perused, paraphrased, commented and descanted upon—or, to say it all in a word, shall be thumb'd over by posterity, in a chapter apart—I say, by posterity—and care not, if I repeat the word again—for what has this book done, more than the Legation of Moses, or the Tale of a Tub, that it may not swim down the gutter of time along with them?

I will not argue the matter: Time wastes too fast; every letter I trace, tells me with what ra-

pidity Life follows my pen; the days and hours of it, more precious, my dear Jenny! than the rubies about thy neck, are flying over our heads, like light clouds of a windy day, never to return more.—Every thing presses on:—Whilst thou art twisting that lock,—see! it grows grey;—and every time I kiss thy hand to bid adieu, and every absence which follows it, are preludes to that eternal separation which we are shortly to make—

——Heaven have mercy upon us both!

## CHAP. IX.

NOW, for what the world thinks of that ejaculation—I would not give a groat.

## CHAP. X.

MY mother had gone with her left arm twisted in my father's right, till they had got to the fatal angle of the old garden wall, where doctor Slop was overthrown by Obadiah on the coach-horse: As this was directly opposite to the front of Mrs. Wadman's house, when my father came to it, he gave a look across; and seeing my uncle Toby and the Corporal within ten paces of the door, he turn'd about—"Let us just "stop a moment, quoth my father, and see with "what ceremonies my brother Toby and his man "Trim make their first entry——it will not de-"tain us, added my father, a single minute:"—No matter, if it be ten minutes, quoth my mother.

—It will not detain us half a one, said my father.

The Corporal was just then setting in with the story of his brother Tom and the Jew's widow: The story went on—and on—it had episodes in it—it came back, and went on—and on again; there was no end of it—the reader found it very long——

—G— help my father! he pish'd fifty times at every new attitude, and gave the Corporal's stick, with all its flourishings and danglings, to as many devils as chose to accept of them.

When issues of events like these my father is waiting for, are hanging in the scales of fate, the mind has the advantage of changing the principle of expectation three times, without which it would not have power to see it out.

Curiosity governs the first moment, and the second moment is all economy, to justify the expense of the first——and for the third, fourth, fifth, and six moments, and so on to the day of judgment—'tis a point of HONOR.

I need not be told, that the ethic writers have assigned this all to Patience; but that VIRTUE, methinks, has extent of dominion sufficient of her own, and enough to do in it, without invading the few dismantled castles which HONOR has left him upon the earth.

My father stood it out as well as he could, with these three auxiliaries, to the end of Trim's story; and from thence to the end of my uncle Toby's panegyric upon arms, in the chapter following it; when seeing, that, instead of marching up to Mrs. Wadman's door, they both faced about, and marched down the avenue, diametrically opposite to his expectation—he broke out at once with that little subacid sourness of humor, which, in certain situations, distinguished his character from that of all other men.

## CHAP. XI.

—"NOW, what can their two noddles be about?" cried my father, &c.....

I dare say, said my mother, they are making fortifications.....

....Not on Mrs. Wadman's premises! cried my father, stepping back.....

I suppose not, quoth my mother.

I wish, said my father, raising his voice, the whole science of fortification at the devil; with all its trumpery of saps, mines, blinds, gabions, fausse-brays and cuvettes.....

.....They are foolish things.....said my mother.

Now she had a way, which, by the bye, I would this moment give away my purple jerkin, and my yellow slippers into the bargain, if some of your reverences would imitate.....and that was, never to refuse her assent and consent to any proposition my father laid before her, merely because she did not understand it, or had no ideas to the principal word or term of art, upon which the tenet or proposition rolled. She contented herself with doing all that her godfathers and godmothers promised for her.....but no more; and so would go on using a hard word twenty years together.....and replying to it too, if it was a verb, in all its moods and tenses, without giving herself any trouble to enquire about it.

This was an eternal source of misery to my father, and broke the neck, at the first setting out, of more good dialogues between them than could

have done the most petulant contradiction.....the few which survived were the better for the *cuvettes*.

—" They are foolish things," said my mother.

—Particularly the cuvettes, replied my father.

'Twas enough—he tatsed the sweet of triumph —and went on.

—Not that they are, properly speaking, Mrs. Wadman's premises, said my father, partly correcting himself—because she is but tenant for life.——

—That makes a great difference, said my mother.——

—In a fool's head, replied my father.——

—Unless she should happen to have a child—said my mother.——

—But she must pursuade my brother Toby first to get her one.——

—To be sure, Mr. Shandy, quoth my mother.

—Though if it comes to pursuasion—said my father—Lord have mercy upon them.

Amen: Said my mother, piano.

Amen: Cried my father, fortissimo.

Amen: Said my mother again—but with such a sighing cadence of personal pity at the end of it, as discomfited every fibre about my father—He instantly took out his almanac: But before he could untie it, Yorick's congregation coming out of church, became a full answer to one half of his business with it;—and my mother telling him it was a sacrament day—left him as little in doubt, as to the other part—He put his almanac into his pocket.

The first lord of the treasury, thinking of ways and means, could not have returned home, with a more embarrassed look.

## CHAP. XII.

UPON looking back from the end of the last chapter, and surveying the texture of what has been wrote, it is necessary, that upon this page and the five following, a good quantity of heterogeneous matter be inserted, to keep up that just balance betwixt wisdom and folly, without which a book would not hold together a single year: Nor is it a poor creeping digression, (which, but for the name of, a man might continue as well going on in the king's highway) which will do the business—no; if it is to be a digression, it must be a good frisky one, and upon a frisky subject too, where neither the horse or his rider are to be caught, but by rebound.

The only difficulty, is raising powers suitable to the nature of the service: Fancy is capricious—WIT must not be searched for—and PLEASANTRY (good-natured slut as she is) will not come in at a call, was an empire to be laid at her feet.

The best way for a man is to say his prayers.

Only if it puts him in mind of his infirmities and defects, as well ghostly as bodily—for that purpose, he will find himself rather worse after he has said them than before—for other purposes better.

For my own part, there is not a way, either moral or mechanical under heaven, that I could think of, which I have not taken with myself in this case; sometimes by addressing myself directly to the soul herself, and arguing the point

over and over again with her, upon the extent of her own faculties——

—I never could make them an inch the wider—

Then, by changing my system, and trying what could be made of it upon the body, by temperance, soberness, and chastity. These are good, quoth I, in themselves—they are good absolutely;—they are good, relatively;—they are good for health—they are good for happiness in this word—they are good for happiness in the next—

In short, they were good for every thing but the thing wanted; and there they were good for nothing, but to leave the soul just as heaven made it: As for the theological virtues of faith and hope they give it courage; but that the sniveling virtue of meekness, as my father would always call it, takes it quite away again, so you are exactly where you started.

Now, in all common and ordinary cases, there is nothing which I have found to answer so well as this——

—Certainly if there is any dependence upon logic, and that I am not blinded by self-love, there must be something of true genius about me, merely upon this symptom of it, that I do not know what envy is: For I never do hit upon any invention or device which tendeth to the furtherance of good writing, but I instantly make it public; willing that all mankind should write as well as myself——

—Which they certainly will, when they think [illegible] little.

## CHAP. XIII.

NOW in ordinary cases, that is, when I am only stupid, and the thoughts rise heavily nd pass gummous thro' my pen——

Or that I am got, I know not how, into a cold nmetaphorical vein of infamous writing, and annot take a plumb lift out of it for my soul—— ɔ must be obliged to go on writing like a Dutch ɔmmentator to the end of the chapter, unless ɔmething be done——

—I never stand conferring with pen and ink ne moment; for if a pinch of snuff, or a stride r two across the room will not do the business ɔr me—I take a razor at once; and having tried ıe edge of it upon the palm of my hand, without ırther ceremony, except that of first lathering my eard, I shave it off; taking care only, if I do ɔave a hair, that it be not a grey one: This done, change my shirt—put on a better coat—send ɔr my last wig—put my topaz ring upon my fin- er; and in a word, dress myself from one end ɔ the other of me, after my best fashion.

Now the devil in hell must be in it, if this does ot do: For, consider, sir, as every man chooses ɔ be present at the shaving of his own beard (tho' ıere is no rule without an exception) and una- oidably sits over against himself the whole time . is doing, in case he has a hand in it—the situ- tion, like all others, has notions of her own to ut into the brain——

—I maintain it, the conceits of a rough-beard- d man, are seven years more terse and juvenile ɔr *one single* operation; and, if they do not run

a risk of being quite shaved away, might be carried up by continual shavings, to the highest pitch of sublimity——How Homer could write with so long a beard, I don't know—and as it makes against my hypothesis, I as little care—— But let us return to the toilet.

Ludovicus Sorbonensis makes this entirely an affair of the body (*exoterike praxis*) as he calls it —but he is deceived; the soul and body are joint sharers in every thing they get: A man cannot dress, but his ideas get clothed at the same time; and if he dresses like a gentleman every one of them stands presented to his imagination, genteelized along with him—so that he has nothing to do, but take his pen, and write like himself.

For this cause, when your honors and reverences would know whether I write clean and fit to be read, you will be able to judge full as well by looking into my laundress's bill as my book: There was one single month in which I can make it appear, that I dirtied one and thirty shirts with clean writing; and after all, was more abused, cursed, criticised and confounded, and had more mystic heads shaken at me, for what I had wrote in that one month, than in all the other months of that year put together.

——But their honors and reverences had not seen my bills.

## CHAP. XIV.

AS I never had any intention of beginning the digression, I am making all this preparation for, till I come to the 15th chapter——I have this chapter to put to whatever use I think proper—— I have twenty this moment ready for it—I could write my chapter of Button-holes in it——

Or my chapter of Pishes, which should follow them——

Or my chapter of Knots, in case their reverences have done with them—They might lead me into mischief: The safest way is to follow the track of the learned, and raise objections against what I have been writing, tho' I declare beforehand, I know no more than my heels how to answer them.

And first, it may be said, there is a pelting kind of thersitical satire, as black as the very ink 'tis wrote with—(and by the bye, whoever says so, is indebted to the muster-master general of the Grecian army, for suffering the name of so ugly and foul-mouth'd a man as Thersites to continue upon his roll—for it has furnished him with an epithet)—in these productions he will urge, all the personal washings and scrubbings upon earth do a sinking genius no sort of good—but just the contrary, inasmuch as the dirtier the fellow is, the better generally he succeeds in it.

To this, I have no other answer——at least ready——but that the archbishop of Benevento wrote his nasty romance of the Galatea, as all

the world knows, in a purple coat, waistcoat, and purple pair of breeches; and that the penance set him, of writing a commentary upon the book of the Revelations, as severe as it was looked upon by one part of the world, was far from being deemed so by the other, upon the single account of that investment.

Another objection to all this remedy, is its want of universality; forasmuch as the shaving part of it, upon which so much stress is laid, by an unalterable law of nature, excludes one half of the species entirely from its use: All I can say is, that female writers, whether of England, or of France, must e'en go without it.

As for the Spanish ladies——I am in no sort of distress.——

## CHAP. XV.

THE fifteenth chapter is come at last; and brings nothing with it but a sad signature of "How our pleasures slip from under us in this "world!"

For, in talking of my digression—I declare before heaven I have made it!—What a strange creature is mortal man, said she.

'Tis very true, said I—but 'twere better to get all these things out of our heads, and return to my uncle Toby.

## CHAP. XVI.

WHEN my uncle Toby and the Corporal had marched down to the bottom of the avenue, they recollected their business lay the other way; so they faced about, and marched up straight to Mrs. Wadman's door.

I warrant your honor, said the Corporal, touching his Montero cap with his hand, as he passed him in order to give a knock at the door—My uncle Toby, contrary to his invariable way of treating his faithful servant said nothing good or bad: The truth was, he had not altogether marshalled his ideas—he wished for another conference; and as the Corporal was mounting up the three steps before the door,—he hemm'd twice—a portion of my uncle Toby's modest spirits fled, at each expulsion, towards the Corporal; he stood with the rapper of the door suspended for a full minute in his hand, he scarce knew why. Bridget stood perdue within, with her finger and her thumb upon the latch, benumbed with expectation; and Mrs. Wadman, with an eye ready to be defloured again, sat breathless behind the window-curtain of her bed-chamber, watching their approach.

Trim? said my uncle Toby—but as he articulated the word, the minute expired, and Trim let fall the rapper.

My uncle Toby, perceiving that all hopes of a conference were knock'd on the head by it—whistled Lillabullero.

## CHAP. XVII.

AS Mrs. Bridget's finger and thumb were upon the latch, the Corporal did not knock as oft as perchance your honor's taylor—I might have taken my example something nearer home; for I owe mine some five and twenty pounds at least, and wonder at the man's patience——

—But this is nothing at all to the world; only 'tis a cursed thing to be in debt; and there seems to be a fatality in the exchequers of some poor princes, particularly those of our house, which no economy can bind down in irons: For my own part, I am persuaded there is not any one prince, prelate, pope or potentate, great or small upon earth, more desirous in his heart of keeping straight with the world than I am—or who takes more likely means for it. I never give above half a guinea—or walk with boots—or cheapen tooth-picks—or lay out a shilling upon a band-box the year round; and for the six months I am in the country, I am upon so small a scale, that with all the good temper in the world, I out-do Rousseau a bar length—for I keep neither man, or boy, or horse, or cow, or dog, or cat, or any thing that can eat or drink, except a thin poor piece of a vestal to keep my fire in, and who has generally as bad an appetite as myself;—but if you think this makes a philosopher of me—I would not, my good people! give a rush for your judgments.

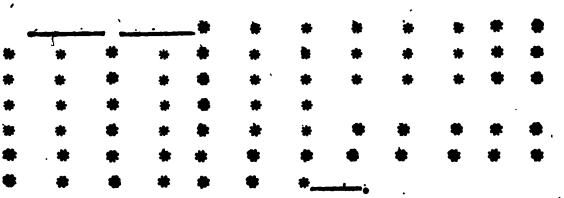
True philosophy—but there is no treating the subject whilst my uncle is whistling Lillabullero.

—Let us go into the house.

## CHAP. XVIII.

## CHAP. XIX.

## CHAP. XX.



——— ———* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * *———.

——You shall see the very place, madam; said my uncle Toby.

Mrs. Wadman blush'd———look'd toward the door——turn'd pale——blush'd slightly again—recovered her natural color——blush'd worse than ever; which, for the sake of the unlearned reader, I translate thus:

" *L—! I cannot look at it——*
" *What would the world say if I look'd at it?*
" *I should drop down if I look'd at it——*
" *I wish I could look at it——*
" *There can be no sin in looking at it.*
" *——I will look at it.*"

Whilst all this was running thro' Mrs. Wadman's imagination, my uncle Toby had risen from the sopha, and got to the other side of the parlor door, to give Trim an order about it in the passage———

* * * * * * * * * * * * *
* * * *——I believe it is in the garret, said my uncle Toby—I saw it there, an' please your honor, this morning, answered Trim—Then prithee, step directly for it, Trim, said my uncle Toby, and bring it into the parlor.

The Corporal did not approve of the orders, but most cheerfully obeyed them. The first was not an act of his will—the second was: So he put on his Montero cap, and went as fast as his lame knee would let him. My uncle Toby returned into the parlor, and sat himself down again upon the sopha.

—You shall lay your finger upon the place—said my uncle Toby——I will not touch it however, quoth Mrs. Wadman to herself.

This requires a second translation:—It shows what little knowledge is got by mere words—we must go up to the first springs.

Now, in order to clear up the mist which hangs upon these three pages, I must endeavor to be as clear as possible myself.

Rub your hands thrice across your foreheads—blow your noses——cleanse your emunctories—sneeze, my good people!—God bless you——

Now give me all the help you can.

## CHAP. XXI.

AS there are fifty different ends (counting all ends in—as well civil as religious) for which a woman takes a husband, she first sets about and carefully weighs, then separates and distinguishes in her mind, which of all that number of ends is her's: Then by discourse, inquiry, argumentation and inference, she investigates and finds out whether she has got hold of the right one—and *if* she has—then by pulling it gently this way

and that way, she farther forms a judgment, whether it will not break in the drawing.

The imagery under which *Slawkenbergius* impresses this upon his reader's fancy, in the beginning of his third Decade, is so ludicrous, that the honor I bear the sex, will not suffer me to quote it—otherwise 'tis not destitute of humor.

She first, saith *Slawkenbergius*, stops the ass, and holding his halter in her left hand (lest he should get away) she thrusts her right hand into the very bottom of his pannier to search for it—For what !——you'll not know the sooner, quoth Slawkenbergius, for interrupting me——

"I have nothing, good lady, but empty bottles," says the ass.

"I am loaded with tripes," says the second.

—And thou art little better, quoth she, to the third; for nothing is there in thy panniers, but trunk-hose and pantoufles——and so to the fourth and fifth, going on one by one thro' the whole string, till, coming to the ass which carries it, she turns the pannier upside down, looks at it—considers it—samples it—measures it—stretches it—wets it—dries it—then takes her teeth both to the warp and weft of it———

—Of what? for the love of Christ!

I am determined, answered *Slawkenbergius*, that all the powers upon earth shall never wring that secret from my breast.

## CHAP. XXII.

WE live in a world beset on all sides with mysteries and riddles——and so 'tis no matter——else it seems strange, that Nature, who makes every thing so well to answer its destination, and seldom or never errs, unless for pastime, in giving such forms and aptitudes to whatever passes thro' her hands, that, whether she designs for the plough, the caravan, the cart—or whatever other creature she models, be it but an ass's foal, you are sure to have the thing you wanted; and yet at the same time should so eternally bungle it as she does, in making so simple a thing as a married man.

Whether it is in the choice of the clay——or that it is frequently spoiled in the baking, by an excess of which a husband may turn out too crusty (you know) on one hand——or not enough so, thro' defect of heat, on the other—or whether this great artificer is not so attentive to the little platonic exigencies *of that part* of the species, for whose use she is fabricating *this*—or that her ladyship sometimes scarce knows what sort of a husband will do—I know not; we will discourse about it after supper.

It is enough, that neither the observation itself or the reasoning upon it, are at all to the purpose, —but rather against it; since, with regard to my uncle Toby's fitness for the marriage state, nothing was ever better: She had formed him of the best and kindliest clay—had temper'd it with her own milk, and breathed into it the sweetest spirit—she had made him all gentle, generous and hu-

mane—she had fill'd his heart with trust and confidence, and disposed every passage which led to it, for the communication of the tenderest offices —she had, moreover, considered the other causes for which matrimony was ordained——

And accordingly * * *

interests in the one—and doing the thing which most pleased herself in the other; so had as many stakes depending upon my uncle Toby's wound, as the devil himself.—Mrs. Wadman had but one—and as it possibly might be her last, (without discouraging Mrs. Bridget, or discrediting her talents) was determined to play her cards herself.

She wanted not encouragement: A child might have look'd into his hand—there was such a plainness and simplicity in his playing out what trumps he had—with such an unmistrusting ignorance of the *ten-ace*—and so naked and defenceless did he sit upon the same sopha with widow Wadman, that a generous heart would have wept to have won the game off him.

Let us drop the metaphor.

## CHAP. XXIV.

AND the story too——if you please; for tho' I have all along been hastening towards this part of it, with so much earnest desire, as well knowing it to be the choicest morsel of what I had to offer to the world, yet now that I am got to it, any one is welcome to take my pen and go on with the story for me that will—I see the difficulties of the descriptions I am going to give—and feel my want of powers.

It is one comfort at least to me, that I lost some fourscore ounces of blood this week, in a most uncritical fever, which attacked me at the beginning of this chapter; so that I have still some hopes remaining, it may be more in the serous or globular parts of the blood, than in the subtle *aura* of the brain—Be it which it will—an Invocation can do no hurt—and I leave the affair entirely to the *invoked*, to inspire or to inject me according as he sees good.

## THE INVOCATION.

GENTLE spirit of sweetest humor, who erst did sit upon the easy pen of my beloved CERVANTES; thou who glid'dst daily thro' his lattice, and turned'st the twilight of his prison into noon-day brightness of thy presence——tinged'st his little urn of water with heaven-sent nectar, and all the time he wrote of Sancho and his master, didst cast thy mystic mantle o'er his wither'd † stump, and wide extended it to all the evils of his life——

—TURN in hither, I beseech thee !—behold these breeches !—they are all I have in the world —that piteous rent was given them at Lyons—

My shirts ! see what a deadly schism has happened amongst 'em——for the laps are in Lombardy, and the rest of 'em here—I never had but six, and a cunning gipsy of a laundress at Milan, cut me off the *fore*-laps of five—To do her justice, she did it with some consideration—for I was returning *out* of Italy.

And yet, notwithstanding all this, and a pistol tinder-box which was moreover filch'd from me at Sienna, and twice that I paid five pauls for two hard eggs, once at Raddicossini, and a second time at Capua—I do not think a journey through France and Italy, provided a man keeps his temper all the way, so bad a thing as some people would make you believe; there must be *ups* and *downs*, or how the deuce should we get into vallies where Nature spreads so many tables of entertainment ?—'Tis nonsense to imagine they will lend you their voitures to be shaken to pieces for

† *He lost his hand at the battle of Lepanto.*

nothing; and, unless you pay twelve sous for greasing your wheels, how should the poor peasant get butter to his bread?—We really expect too much——and for the livre or two above par for your suppers and bed—at the most, they are but one shilling and ninepence halfpenny—who would embroil their philosophy for it?—For heaven's and for your own sake, pay it—pay it with both hands open, rather than leave *Disappointment* sitting drooping upon the eye of your fair hostess and her damsels in the gate-way, at your departure—and besides, dear sir, you get a sisterly kiss of each of 'em worth a pound—at least I did.

—For my uncle Toby's amours running all the way in my head, they had the same effect upon me as if they had been my own—I was in the most perfect state of bounty and good-will; and felt the kindliest harmony vibrating within me, with every oscillation of the chaise alike; so that whether the roads were rough or smooth, it made no difference; every thing I saw, or had to do with, touched upon some secret spring, either of sentiment or rapture.

—They are the sweetest notes I ever heard: And I instantly let down the fore-glass to hear them more distinctly—'Tis Maria, said the postilion, observing I was listening—Poor Maria, continued he, (leaning his body on one side, to let me see her, for he was in a line betwixt us) is sitting upon a bank, playing her vespers upon her pipe, with her little goat beside her.

The young fellow utter'd this with an accent and a look so perfectly in tune to a feeling heart, that I instantly made a vow, I would give him a four and twenty sous piece, when I got to *Moulins*.

——And who is *poor Maria ?* said I.

The love and pity of all the village around us ; said the postillion—it is but three years ago, that the sun did not shine upon so fair, so quick-witted and amiable a maid ; a better fate did *Maria* deserve, than to have her banns forbid, by the intrigues of the curate of the parish who published them——

He was going on, when Maria, who had made a short pause, put the pipe into her mouth, and began the air again—they were the same notes,—yet were ten times sweeter :—It is the evening service to the Virgin, said the young man——but who has taught her to play it—or how she came by her pipe, no one knows ; we think that Heaven has assisted her in both ; for, ever since she has been unsettled in her mind, it seems her only consolation—she has never once had the pipe out of her hand, but plays that service upon it almost night and day.

The postillion delivered this with so much discretion and natural eloquence, that I could not help decyphering something in his face above his condition, and should have sifted out his history, had not poor Maria's taken such full possession of me.

We had got up by this time almost to the bank where she was sitting : She was in a thin white jacket, with her hair, all but two tresses, drawn up into a silk net, with a few olive leaves twisted a little fantastically on one side :—She was beautiful ; and if ever I felt the full force of an honest heart-ache, it was the moment I saw her.

—God help her ! poor damsel ; above an hundred masses, said the postillion, have been said in

the several parish churches and convents around, for her,—but without effect; we have still hopes, as she is sensible for short intervals, that the Virgin at last will restore her to herself; but her parents who know her best, are hopeless upon that score, and think her senses are lost for ever.

As the postillion spoke this, MARIA made a cadence so melancholy, so tender and querulous, that I sprung out of the chaise to help her, and found myself sitting betwixt her and her goat, before I relapsed from my enthusiasm.

MARIA looked wistfully for some time at me, and then at her goat—and then at me—and then at her goat again, and so on, alternately.——

—Well, Maria, said I, softly——What resemblance do you find?

I do entreat the candid reader to believe me, that it was from the humblest conviction of what a BEAST man is,—that I ask'd the question; and that I would not have let fallen an unseasonable pleasantry in the venerable presence of Misery, to be entitled to all the wit that ever Rabelais scatter'd, and yet I own my heart smote me, and that I so smarted at the very idea of it, that I swore I would set up for Wisdom, and utter grave sentences the rest of my days—and never—never attempt again to commit mirth with man, woman, or child, the longest day I had to live.

As for writing nonsense to them——I believe there was a reserve——but that I leave to the world.

Adieu, Maria!—adieu, poor hapless damsel! ——some time, but not now, I may hear thy sor-

rows from thy own lips :—But I was deceived ; for that moment she took her pipe, and told me such a tale of woe with it, that I rose up, and with broken and irregular steps, walk'd softly to my chaise.

—What an excellent inn at Moulins !

## CHAP. XXV.

WHEN we have got to the end of this chapter (but not before) we must all turn back to the two blank chapters, on the account, which, my honor has lain bleeding this half hour ——I stop it, by pulling off one of my yellow slippers, and throwing it with all my violence to the opposite side of my room, with a declaration at the heel of it——

—That whatever resemblance it may bear to half the chapters which are written in this world, or, for aught I know, may be now writing in it—that it was as casual as the foam of Zeuxis his horse : Besides, I look upon a chapter which has only nothing in it, with respect ; and, considering what worse things there are in the world——that it is no way a proper subject for satire——

Why then was it left so ? And here, without staying for my reply, shall I be called as many blockheads, numbskulls, doddypoles, dunderheads, ninnyhammers, goosecaps, joltheads, nincompoops, and sh-t-a-beds—and other unsavory appellations, as ever the cake-bakers of Lerne cast in the teeth of king Garagantua's shepherds—And I'll let them do it, as Bridget said, as much as they please ; for how was it possible they

should foresee the necessity I was under of writing the 25th chapter of my book before the 18th, &c ?

—So I don't take it amiss—All I wish is, that it may be a lesson to the world, "to let people tell their stories their own way."

*The Eighteenth Chapter.*

AS Mrs. Bridget opened the door before the Corporal had well given the rap, the interval betwixt that and my uncle Toby's introduction into the parlor, was so short, that Mrs. Wadman had but just time to get from behind the curtain ——lay a bible upon the table, and advance a step or two towards the door to receive him.

My uncle Toby saluted Mrs. Wadman, after the manner in which women were saluted by men in the year of our Lord God one thousand seven hundred and thirteen—then facing about,—he marched up abreast with her to the sopha, and in three plain words—tho' not before he was sat down—nor after he was sat down—but as he was sitting down, told her, "he was in love"—so that my uncle Toby strained himself more in the declaration than he needed.

Mrs. Wadman naturally looked down upon a slit she had been darning up in her apron, in expectation, every moment, that my uncle Toby would go on; but having no talents for amplification, and Love, moreover, of all others, being a subject of which he was the least master—when he had told Mrs. Wadman once that he loved her, he let it alone, and left the matter to work after its own way.

My father was always in raptures with this system of my uncle Toby's, as he falsely called it, and would often say, that could his brother Toby to his process have added but a pipe of tobacco—he had wherewithal to have found his way, if there was faith in a Spanish proverb, towards the hearts of half the women upon the globe.

My uncle Toby never understood what my father meant; nor will I presume to extract more from it, than a condemnation of an error, which the bulk of the world lie under—but the French, every one of 'em to a man, who believe in it almost as much as the REAL PRESENSE, "That talking of love, is making it."——

—I would as soon set about making a black pudding by the same receipt.

Let us go on: Mrs. Wadman sat in expectation my uncle Toby would do so, to almost the first pulsation of that minute, wherein silence on one side or other generally becomes indecent; so, edging herself a little more towards him, and raising up her eyes, subblushing as she did it—she took up the gauntlet—or the discourse (if you like it better) and communed with my uncle Toby, thus:

The cares and disquietudes of the marriage state, quoth Mrs. Wadman, are very great. I suppose so—said my uncle Toby; and therefore when a person, continued Mrs. Wadman, is so much at his ease as you are—so happy, captain Shandy, in yourself, your friends and your amusements——I wonder what reasons can incline you to the state——

—They are written, quoth my uncle Toby, in the common prayer book.

Thus far my uncle Toby went on warily, and kept within his depth, leaving Mrs. Wadman to sail upon the gulph as she pleased.

———As for children—said Mrs. Wadman—though a principal end perhaps of the institution, and the natural wish, I suppose, of every parent—yet do not we all find, they are certain sorrows, and very uncertain comforts? and what is there, dear sir, to pay one for the heart-aches—what compensation for the many tender and disquieting apprehensions of a suffering and defenceless mother who brings them into life? I declare, said my uncle Toby, smit with pity, I know of none: Unless it be the pleasure which it has pleased God——

—A fiddlestick! quoth she.

## *Chapter the Nineteenth.*

NOW, there is such an infinitude of notes, tunes, cants, chants, airs, looks, and accents, with which the word *fiddle-stick* may be pronounced in all such cases as this, every one of 'em impressing a sense and meaning as different from the other as *dirt* from *cleanliness*——that casuists (for it is an affair of conscience on that score) reckon up no less than fourteen thousand, in which you may do either right or wrong.

Mrs. Wadman hit upon the *fiddlestick*, which summoned up all my uncle Toby's modest blood into his cheeks—so feeling within himself that he had, somehow or other, got beyond his depth, he stopt short; and, without entering farther, ei-

ther into the pains or pleasures of matrimony, he laid his hand upon his heart, and made an offer to take them as they were, and share them along with her.

When my uncle Toby had said this, he did not care to say it again; so, casting his eye upon the bible, which Mrs. Wadman had laid upon the table, he took it up; and popping, dear soul! upon a passage in it, of all others the most interesting to him—which was the siege of Jericho—— he set himself to read it over——leaving his proposal of marriage, as he had done his declaration of love, to work with her after its own way. Now, it wrought neither as an astringent or a loosener; not like opium, or bark or mercury, or buckthorn, or any one drug which nature had bestow'd upon the world—in short, it work'd not at all in her; and the cause of that was, that there was something working there before——Babbler that I am! I have anticipated what it was a dozen times; but there is fire still in the subject—— Allons.

## CHAP. XXVI.

IT is natural for a perfect stranger, who is going from London to Edinburgh, to inquire, before he sets out, how many miles to York, which is about half way—nor does any body wonder, if he goes on and asks about the corporation, &c.

It was just as natural for Mrs. Wadman, whose first husband was all his time afflicted with a sciatica, to wish to know how far from the hip to the groin; and how far she was likely to suffer more or less in her feelings, in the one case than in the *other.*

She had accordingly read *Drake's* anatomy, from one end to another.—She had peeped into *Wharton* upon the brain, and borrowed *Graaf** upon the bones and muscles; but could make nothing of it.

She had reason'd likewise from her own powers—laid down theorems—drawn consequences, and came to no conclusion.

To clear up all, she had twice asked doctor Slop, "if poor captain Shandy was ever likely to "recover of his wound?"

He is recovered, doctor Slop would say.

What! quite?

Quite, madam——

But what do you mean by a recovery? Mrs. Wadman would say.

Doctor Slop was the worst man alive at definitions; and so Mrs. Wadman could get no knowledge: In short there was no way to extract it, but from my uncle Toby himself.

There is an accent of humanity in an inquiry of this kind, which lulls SUSPICION to rest—and I am half pursuaded the serpent got pretty near it, in his discourse with Eve; for the propensity in the sex to be deceived could not be so great, that she should have boldness to hold chat with the devil without it——But there is an accent of humanity——how shall I describe it?——'tis an accent

* This muſt be a miſtake in Mr. Shandy, for Graaf wrote upon the the pancreatic juice, and the parts of generation.

which covers the part with a garment, and gives the enquirer a right to be as particular with it, as your body surgeon.

" —Was it without remission?——

" —Was it more tolerable in bed?

" —Could he lie on both sides alike with it?

" —Was he able to mount a horse?

" —Was motion bad for it?" et cætera, were so tenderly spoke to, and so directed towards my uncle Toby's heart, that every item of them sunk ten times deeper into it than the evils themselves ——But when Mrs. Wadman went round about by Namur, to get at my uncle Toby's groin; and engaged him to attack the point of the advanced countersçarp, and *pele mele* with the Dutch to take the counter-guard of St. Roch sword in hand....., and then with tender notes playing upon his ear, led him all bleeding by the hand out of the trench, wiping her eye, as he was carried to his tent....Heaven! Earth! Sea!—all was lifted up.., the springs of nature rose above their levels....an angel of mercy sat beside him on the sopha....., his heart glow'd with fire, and had he been worth a thousand, he had lost every heart of them to Mrs. Wadman.

——And whereabouts, dear sir, quoth Mrs. Wadman, a little categorically, did you receive this sad blow?—In asking this question, Mrs. Wadman gave a slight glance toward the waistband of my uncle Toby's red plush breeches, expecting naturally, as the shortest reply to it, that my uncle Toby would lay his forefinger upon the place:—It fell out otherwise—for my uncle Toby having got his wound before the gate of St. Nicholas, in one of the traverses of the trench,

opposite to the salient angle of the demi-bastion of St. Roch, he could at any time stick a pin upon the identical spot of ground where he was standing when the stone struck him ; this struck instantly upon my uncle Toby's sensorium——and with it, struck his large map of the town and citadel of Namur and its environs, which he had purchased and pasted down upon a board, by the Corporal's aid, during his long illness....it had lain with other military lumber, in the garret ever since, and accordingly, the Corporal was detached into the garret to fetch it.

My uncle Toby measured off thirty toises, with Mrs. Wadman's scissars, from the returning angle before the gate of St. Nicholas ; and with such a virgin modesty, laid her finger upon the place, that the goddess of Decency, if then in being..... if not, 'twas her shade——shook her head, and with a finger wavering across her eyes,...forbid her to explain the mistake.

Unhappy Mrs. Wadman !

.....For nothing can make this chapter go off with spirit, but an apostrophe to thee,....but my heart tells me, that in such a crisis, an apostrophe is but an insult in disguise, and ere I would offer one to a woman in distress.....let the chapter go to the devil ; provided any damn'd critic in keeping will be but at the trouble to take it with him.

## CHAP. XXVII.

MY uncle Toby's map is carried down into the kitchen.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

—AND here is the Maes—and this is the Sambre, said the Corporal, pointing with his right hand extended a little towards the map, and his left upon Mrs. Bridget's shoulder—but not the shoulder next him—and this, said he, is the town of Namur—and this the citadel—and there lay the French—and here lay his honor and myself—and in this cursed trench, Mrs. Bridget, quoth the Corporal, taking her by the hand, did he receive the wound which crush'd him so miserably *here*——In pronouncing which, he slightly press'd the back of her hand towards the part he felt for—and let it fall.

We thought, Mr. Trim, it had been more in the middle, said Mrs. Bridget—

That would have undone us for ever—said the Corporal.

—And left my poor mistress undone too—said Bridget.

The Corporal made no reply to the repartee, but by giving Mrs. Bridget a kiss.

Come—come—said Bridget—holding the palm of her left hand parallel to the plane of the horizon,—and sliding the fingers of the other over it, in a way which could not have been done, had there been the least wart or protuberance—'Tis every syllable of it false, cried the Corporal, before she had finished the sentence.

—I know it to be a fact, said Bridget, from credible witnesses.

—Upon my honor, said the Corporal, laying his hand upon his heart, and blushing as he spoke with honest resentment—'tis a story, Mrs. Bridget, as false as hell—Not, said Bridget, interrupting him, that either I or my mistress care a halfpenny about it, whether 'tis so or no—only that when one is married, one would choose to have such a thing by one at least——

It was somewhat unfortunate for Mrs. Bridget, that she had begun the attack with her manual exercise; for the Corporal instantly * * *

nor of so gallant and worthy a soul as my master, wast thou sure to be made a countess of—but thou hast been set on, and deluded, dear Bridget, as is often a woman's case, "to please others more than themselves——"

Bridget's eyes poured down at the sensations the Corporal excited.

——Tell me——tell me then, my dear Bridget, continued the Corporal, taking hold of her hand which hung down dead by her side—and giving a second kiss—whose suspicion has misled thee?

Bridget sobb'd a sob or two—then opened her eyes—the Corporal wip'd 'em with the bottom of her apron—she then open'd her heart and told him all.

## CHAP. XXX.

MY uncle Toby and the Corporal had gone on separately with their operations, the greatest part of the campaign, and as effectually cut off from all communication of what either the one or the other had been doing, as if they had been separated from each other by the Maes or the Sambre.

My uncle Toby, on his side, had presented himself every afternoon in his red and silver, and blue and gold alternately, and sustained an infinity of attacks in them, without knowing them to be attacks—and so had nothing to communicate.

——The Corporal, on his side, in taking Bridget by it, had gained considerable advantages

—and consequently had much to communicate; but what were the advantages—as well as what was the manner by which he had seized them, required so nice an historian, that the Corporal durst not venture upon it, and as sensible as he was of glory, would rather have been contented to have gone bare headed, and without laurels for ever, than torture his master's modesty for a single moment———

—Best of honest and gallant servants !—But I have apostrophiz'd thee, Trim ! once before—and could I apotheosize thee also (that is to say) with good company—I would do it without ceremony in the very next page.

## CHAP. XXXI.

NOW my uncle Toby had one evening laid down his pipe upon the table, and was counting over to himself, upon his finger ends, (beginning at his thumb) all Mrs. Wadman's perfections, one by one; and happening, two or three times together, either by omitting some, or counting others twice over, to puzzle himself sadly before he could get beyond his middle finger—Prithee, Trim ! said he, taking up his pipe again,—bring me a pen and ink: Trim brought paper also.

Take a full sheet—Trim ! said my uncle Toby, making a sign with his pipe, at the same time, to take a chair, and sit down close by him at the table. The Corporal obeyed—placed the paper directly before him—took a pen and dipp'd it in the ink.

——She has a thousand virtues, Trim ! said my uncle Toby——

Am I to set them down, an' please your honor? quoth the Corporal.

....But they must be taken in their ranks, replied my uncle Toby; for of them all, Trim, that which wins me most, and which is a security for all the rest, is the compassionate turn, and singular humanity of her character.....I protest, added my uncle Toby, looking up as he protested it, towards the top of the ceiling.....That was I her brother, Trim, a thousand fold, she could not make more constant or more tender inquiries after my sufferings.....tho' now no more.

The Corporal made no reply to my uncle Toby's protestation, but by a short cough....he dipp'd the pen a second time into the ink-horn; and my uncle Toby, pointing with the end of his pipe as close to the top of the sheet, at the left hand corner of it,.....as he could get it...the Corporal wrote down the word HUMANITY - - - - thus.

Prithee, Corporal, said my uncle Toby, as soon as Trim had done it....how often does Mrs. Bridget inquire after the wound on the cap of thy knee, which thou received'st at the battle of Landen?

She never, an' please your honor, inquires after it at all.

That, Corporal, said my uncle Toby, with all the triumph the goodness of his nature would permit...that shows the difference in the character of the mistress and maid....Had the fortune of war allotted the same mischance to me, Mrs. Wadman would have inquired into every circumstance relating to it an hundred times....She would have inquired, an' please your honor, ten times as often

about your honor's groin——the pain, Trim, is equally excruciating,....and compassion has as much to do with the one as the other——

——God bless your honor! cried the Corporal ——what has a woman's compassion to do with a wound upon the cap of a man's knee? Had your honor's been shot into ten thousand splinters at the affair of Landen, Mrs. Wadman would have troubled her head as little about it as Bridget; because, added the Corporal, lowering his voice, and speaking very distinctly, as he assigned his reason———

"The knee is such a distance from the main "body————whereas the groin, your honor "knows, is upon the very curtain of the *place*."

My uncle Toby gave a long whistle——but in a note which could scarce be heard across the table.

The Corporal had advanced too far to retire ——in three words he told the rest——

My uncle Toby laid down his pipe as gently upon the fender, as if it had been spun from the unravellings of a spider's web——

——Let us go to my brother Shandy's, said he.

## CHAP. XXXII.

THERE will be just time, whilst my uncle Toby and Trim, are walking to my father's, to inform you, that Mrs. Wadman had, some moons before this, made a confident of my mother; and that Mrs. Bridget, who had the burden

of her own, as well as her mistress's secret to carry, had got happily delivered of both to Susannah, behind the garden-wall.

As for my mother, she saw nothing at all in it, to make the least bustle about——but Susannah was sufficient, by herself, for all the ends and purposes you could possibly have, in exporting a family secret; for she instantly imparted it by signs to Jonathan.....and Jonathan by tokens to the cook as she was basting a loin of mutton; the cook sold it with some kitchen-fat to the postillion for a groat, who truck'd it with the dairy-maid for something of about the same value....and though whisper'd in the hay-loft, Fame caught the notes with her brazen-trumpet, and sounded them upon the house-top....In a word, not an old woman in the village, or five miles round, who did not understand the difficulties of my uncle Toby's siege, and what were the secret articles which had delayed the surrender.——

My father, whose way was, to force every event in nature into an hypothesis, by which means never man crucified Truth at the rate he did.....had but just heard of the report as my uncle Toby set out; and catching fire suddenly at the trespass done his brother by it, was demonstrating to Yorick, notwithstanding my mother was sitting by.... not only "that the devil was in women, and that "the whole of the affair was lust;" but that every evil and disorder in the world, of what kind or nature soever, from the first fall of Adam, down to my uncle Toby's (inclusive) was owing one way or other to the same unruly appetite.

Yorick was just bringing my father's hypothesis to some temper, when my uncle Toby entering the room with marks of infinite benevolence and

forgiveness in his looks, my father's eloquence rekindled against the passion ;...and as he was not very nice in the choice of his words when he was wroth.....as soon as my uncle Toby was seated by the fire, and had filled his pipe, my father broke out in this manner.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

——THAT provision should be made for continuing the race of so great, so exalted, and godlike a Being as man——I am far from denying——but philosophy speaks freely of every thing ; and therefore I still think, and do maintain it to be a pity, that it should be done by means of a passion which bends down the faculties, and turns all the wisdom, contemplations, and operations of the soul backwards——a passion, my dear, continued my father, addressing himself to my mother, which couples and equals wise men with fools, and make us come out of our caverns and hiding-places more like satyrs and four-footed beasts than men.

I know it will be said, continued my father, (availing himself of the prolepsis) that in itself, and simply taken—like hunger, or thirst, or sleep, ——'tis an affair neither good or bad—or shameful, or otherwise——Why then did the delicacy of Diogenes and Plato so recalcitrate against it? and wherefore, when we go about to make and plant a man, do we put out the candle ? and for what reason is it, that all the parts thereof,—the congredients——the preparations——the instruments, and whatever serves thereto, are so held, as to be conveyed to a cleanly mind by no language, translations, or periphrasis whatever?

—The act of killing and destroying a man, continued my father, raising his voice,—and turning to my uncle Toby——you see, is glorious——and the weapons by which we do it, are honorable—— We march with them upon our shoulders—— We strut with them by our sides———We gild them——We carve them——We inlay them—— We enrich them———Nay, if it be but a scoundrel cannon, we cast an ornament upon the breech of it.——

——My uncle Toby laid down his pipe to intercede for a better epithet—and Yorick was rising up to batter the whole hypothesis to pieces—

——When Obadiah broke into the middle of the room with a complaint, which cried out for an immediate hearing.

The case was this :

My father, whether by ancient custom of the manor, or as impropriator of the great tythes, was obliged to keep a bull for the service of the parish, and Obadiah, had led his cow upon a *popvisit* to him one day or other the preceding summer—I say, one day or other—because as chance would have it, it was the day on which he was married to my father's housemaid——so one was a reckoning to the other. Therefore, when Obadiah's wife was brought to bed—Obadiah thanked God—

—Now, said Obadiah, I shall half a calf; so Obadiah went daily to visit his cow.

She'll calve on Monday—or Tuesday—or Wednesday at farthest——

The cow did not calve—no—she'll not calve till next week—the cow put it off terribly till the end of the sixth week; Obadiah's suspicions (like a good man's) fell upon the bull.

Now, the parish being very large, my father's bull, to speak the truth of him, was no way equal to the department; he had however got himself somehow or other, thrust into employment——and as he went thro' the business with a grave face, my father had a high opinion of him.

—Most of the townsmen, an' please your worship, quoth Obadiah, believe that 'tis all the bull's fault——

—But may not a cow be barren? replied my father, turning to doctor Slop.

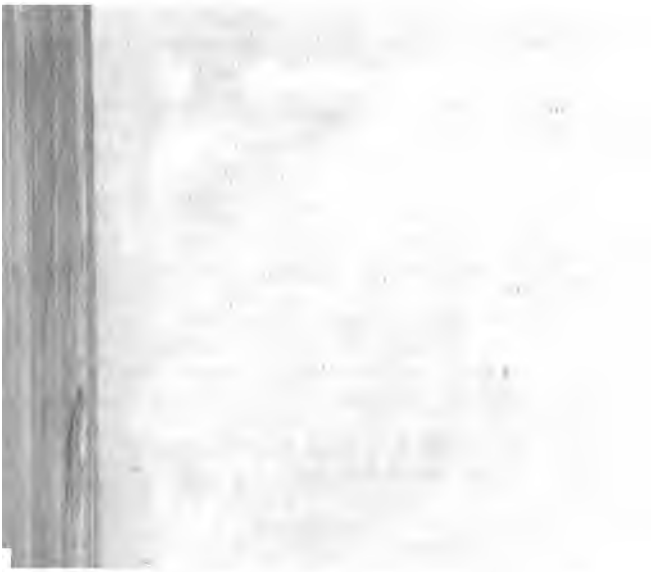
It never happens, said doctor Slop; but the man's wife may have come before her time naturally enough——Prithee, has the child hair upon his head?——added doctor Slop——

—It is as hairy as I am; said Obadiah.——Obadiah had not been shaved for three weeks ——Wheu - - u - - u - - - - - - - -, cried my father, beginning the sentence with an exclamatory whistle——and so, brother Toby, this poor bull of mine, who is as good a bull as ever p—ss'd, and might have done for Europa herself in purer times——had he but two legs less, might have been driven into Doctor's Commons and lost his character—which to a town bull, brother Toby, is the very same thing as his life.

L—d! said my mother, what is all this story about?

A COCK and a BULL, said Yorick—And one of the best of its kind I ever heard.

END OF VOLUME TWO.



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

MAR